Ladies and gentlemen, I am officially announcing my very own Bluey AU fanfic that is all focused around Brandy Cattle, and how she's able to finally find a solution to her infertility conditions.
This is also the fanfic that will also include my OC Shelton, and how he becomes Brandy's saviour and loving partner. And no, other DA users Bluey OCs will not be featured in this fanfic.
This fanfic will not be posted on that fanfic website. So instead, it will all be posted on DeviantArt.
And yes, this fanfic will have a prologue, several chapters, and an epilogue. And it'll take place between the events of the episode "Onesies" and the special "The Sign".
I am super excited to post all of this. I know all of you will enjoy it, especially people that are into Bluey like I am.

It was evening in the city of Brisbane, pedestrians were heading back to their homes, getting ready to have dinner before they tuck themselves in for the coming night.

In the old familiar Heeler residence, Chilli was waving goodbye to her sister Brandy after she gave Bluey and Bingo two pairs of onesies and stayed over for dinner. After waving her goodbyes, Chilli turned to her daughters, who were helping their father clean up the kitchen after their dinner.

“Bluey! Bingo!” Chilli called out to them as she closed the front door behind her.

“Yes, mum?” They both said in unison.

“Would you mind if I take your onesies to get them washed?” Chilli asked.

“Sure, mum” Bluey and Bingo said in unison as they went to one of the stools in the kitchen and grabbed their onesies.

Bluey and Bingo handed their Cheetah and Zebra onesies to their mother, who then began to take them to the area where the washing machine and dryer were. The kids then continued to clean up the kitchen with their father. Bandit was washing all of the plates, cups, bowls, and silverware. He handed them to Bluey and Bingo, who were putting them in the dishwasher. After all of the dishes had been put away, Bandit closed the dishwasher after inserting a dishwasher tab into it and turned it on.

“Good job, kiddos.” Bandit said, congratulating his daughters. “Now what shall we do?”
“What about watching a bit of TV before we go to bed?” Bingo asked, her tail wagging back and forth.
Bandit thought about that for a bit. “Uh.. how about I go ahead and watch some TV, and you kids can go play with your toys before it’s time to hit the sack. What do you say?” He asked.
“Sounds great, dad!” Bluey said excitedly, her tail also beginning to wag.
As Bluey and Bingo went to the play area to play with their toys, Bandit went to the living area, and sat down on the couch. He then grabbed the remote, turned on the TV, put his hands behind his head, and sighed. Bluey and Bingo were setting up a tea party game that they were going to play before they went to bed. While they were doing so, Bluey froze and began to think back on the onesie mayhem that unfolded when her Aunty Brandy came over, her expression full of worry. Not only that, Bluey also thought about what her mother had said to her about what her Aunty Brandy wanted but never had. Bluey’s expression changed to jovial as she went to talk to her sister.
“Bingo?” Bluey asked.
“Yes, Bluey?” Bingo asked also.
“I’m gonna go and check up on mum. Would you like to finish setting up the tea party while I go check up on mum?” Bluey asked again.
“Okay, Bluey.” Bingo replied as she continued to set up the tea party.
With that, Bluey went to go see her mother, who had just finished putting her daughters’ onesies into the washing machine and filling the slots with the respective detergent and softener.
“Mum?” Bluey asked as she walked in.
“Hey, Bluey.” Chilli said cheerfully as she turned on the washing machine. “What’s up?”
“I have something to ask about Aunty Brandy.” Bluey said, her expression concerned. “I know that you said that Aunty Brandy can’t

have the things she wanted because it’s not meant to be, but do you think that she will find a solution eventually?”
Chilli’s expression changed to worry as her daughter asked that question. She looked around the room, then she looked back at Bluey and sighed. She then kneeled down to Bluey, her expression changing to a warm smile.
“Bluey.” She began. “I know what I said before when Aunty Brandy came over, but,” She paused for a moment, then began to speak again. “Your Aunty Brandy is still trying to get over her condition.”
“And what is that condition?” Bluey asked curiously. “You never told me what it was.”
“That condition is known as infertility.” Chilli replied as she and Bluey walked to the front door of the house together.
“Oh.” Bluey said understandably. “And does that happen to all girls?”
“Well, not every woman gets it.” Chilli answered as she and Bluey exited the front door and sat on the front porch. “Girls first start to get that when they are in their 20s. And then, it tends to remain with them until they are in their 40s when they don't have the ability to have kids altogether.”
Bluey nodded her head as she looked back at her mother, who was staring off into the sunset. “But what if Aunty Brandy was able to get what she wanted?” She asked.
Chilli looked back at Bluey. “Well, it’ll have to take a lot of complications in order for her to finally achieve the things that she wants.” She said, “But who knows what will happen. Even though what I said before was a bit harsh, you and I will still root for Aunty Brandy to see if she finds a solution to her problems.”
Chilli pulled her daughter close to her side and stared at the sun almost receding past the horizon, the stars beginning to faintly appear as the sun slowly dipped lower and lower. Chilli and Bluey both knew that one day, Brandy will finally be free from her troubles and will have the chance to start her own family just like Chilli.
“Mum?” Bluey asked again. “Do you also think that Aunty Brandy will find someone that is as amazing as dad?”

Chilli chuckled as she gently leaned her head on her daughter. “Well, some people don’t tend to be with a woman who is infertile, but then again, who knows?”

Bluey then leaned her head on her mother as well. They continued to stare into the sunset, thinking about Brandy and how she’ll be able to finally break free from her troubles and find her way into a more happier, loving, caring, and beautiful life and future.

It was a glorious and beautiful day in Australia. The sun was shining, the air was warm, the birds were singing, and the pedestrians were having such splendid fun, whether it’s bonding with their kids, exploring parks, and hanging out with their loved ones. One particular day, in the Hammerbarn store, pedestrians were walking around the store, buying items and objects for their homes, buying plants and flowers for their greenhouses, and buying chairs to decorate their backyard porches. Meanwhile, outside of the building, there was a Shetland Sheepdog wearing the usual Hammerbarn uniform. They were directing a big 18-wheeler tractor trailer truck into one of the bay doors. His name was Shelton Sheltie. He was at an age ranging from unknown to early-to-mid 40s. He first applied for a job at the Hammerbarn store when he was in his 20s. He’s been working here for years, and he really enjoys all of it.

Shelton was giving the truck driver some guidance towards the bay door. “A little closer, mate!” He called out. “A little closer..” Then, the trailer of the truck finally lined up with the bay door. “Perfect!” Shelton said, giving the truck driver the stop signal. “That’s good!”

“Thank you, mate!” The truck driver called out as they gave Shelton a thumbs up.

Shelton returned the thumbs up to the truck driver. Then, his boss came over to him. He was a French Bulldog, who happens to be the manager of the Hammebarn store.

“Shelton.” His boss spoke. “I’m impressed with your guidance.”

“Thank you, sir.” Shelton said proudly.

“And I know that you’re busy with other things,” His boss continued, “So how about you stock the shelves, then you can do whatever you like to do before you come back. We’ll have someone else fill in for you while you’re away.”

“Sir.” Shelton said, placing a hand on his boss's shoulder. “I gladly appreciate the offer. I’ll work my hardest.”
“Good.” His boss said cheerfully. “Have a good day, Shelton.”
“Take care, sir!” Shelton called out as he watched his boss walk away.
Shelton went inside the building, then he noticed that only two shelves were not stocked yet. So with that, he got to work, stacking all of the items on the two shelves that he needed to fill. Meanwhile, Chilli’s sister Brandy Cattle entered the building. It had been one week since she came over to her sister's place to give her nieces onesies. Right now, she came over to the Hammerbarn store so she can buy some new light bulbs for her desk lamp since the old ones she had completely burned out.
“Now where can I find some good light bulbs around here?” She asked. Brandy then noticed Shelton stocking one of the shelves.
“Maybe I’ll ask one of the employees.” She decided.
She walked over to where Shelton was working and began to speak.
“Hello, sir.” She said, grabbing Shelton’s attention.
“Yes?” Shelton asked as he looked over. “Oh, wow.” He said slowly as his eyes widened with admiration.
His eyes scanned all over Brandy and her appearance. She was a very lovely lady. She also had her green bag with the lemon decals on it as well. Brandy raised a brow confusingly as Shelton admired her looks.
“Uh..” Brandy said. “Sir, are you good?”
Shelton then snapped out of his lovestruck state and cleared his throat. “Sorry about that, miss. I was suddenly entranced by your looks. Nice to see you. You’re cute, by the way.”
Brandy blushed deeply at the compliment, but she couldn’t help but smile. “Aww, thank you, sir.” She said as she rubbed her head shyfully. “You look very handsome yourself.”
“Thank you.” Shelton replied. “Anyway, how can I help you, miss?”
“I need some new light bulbs for my desk lamp back at home.” Brandy explained. “Can you show me where they are?”
“Of course, miss.” Shelton answered. “Just follow me, and I’ll take you to where you need to go.”

As Shelton walked off, Brandy followed. As Shelton led Brandy to where the light bulbs were, he could see in her eyes that Brandy had a condition known as infertility. But he didn’t want to say it to her yet. So he continued on until they finally reached the aisle full of lamps and light bulbs.
“The light bulbs are right here, miss.” Shelton said, pointing to the light bulbs.
“Thank you so much, kind sir.” Brandy said. She began to scan through the light bulbs to see which one suited her best. After she picked the rightful ones that she liked, she put them in her bag. Then, Shelton came up to her.
“Um..” He began. “Miss?”
“Yes?” Brandy asked as she turned to face Shelton.
“I haven't caught your name yet.” Shelton said. “Do you want to share it with me?”
Brandy was a bit unsure since she never talked to strangers that she didn’t know about, but she obliged to introduce herself to Shelton just so she could get to know him more. “Sure.” She said, “My name is Brandy. Brandy Cattle. And what’s yours?”
Shelton beamed. “My name is Shelton. Shelton Sheltie. It’s a pleasure to meet you.” He said.
“Pleased to meet you too, Shelton.” Brandy replied.
Shelton then looked around, then he looked back at Brandy. “Uh.. I have something to ask you about.”
“What do you mean?” Brandy asked. “Is there something that you want to discuss?”
Shelton nodded his head. “Yes,” He said, “But that will have to wait. So how about you pay for the light bulbs first, then wait outside for me until I finish stocking the last shelf, okay?”
“Okay.” Brandy obliged. “See you outside, Shelton.”
She then walked to where the checkout was and bought her light bulbs. Then, she walked outside of the building and leaned her back up against the wall and waited for Shelton to arrive. She was curious about what Shelton wanted to ask and discuss with her. She kept that in the back of her head as she waited. After Shelton was done

stocking the last shelf, he wiped the sweat off of his head, then put his hand on his hips.
“There.” He said, “All done.”
He then went to grab his blue backpack with strawberry decals and headed out the door to meet up with Brandy, who was still sitting up against the wall.
“Hey, Brandy.” Shelton greeted.
“Oh, there you are, Shelton.” Brandy said as she walked up to him. “Ready to discuss whatever it is you want to ask me?”
“Yes.” Shelton replied. He cleared his throat and began to give Brandy the promised question. “So, there’s a condition that women start to get when they reach around 20 years old. And it remains with them forever if they don’t go to a checkup. And that condition is infertility.”
Brandy’s expression frowned at the mention of the condition she had, but she continued to listen.
“And I can see it in your eyes that you have that condition.” Shelton continued, his expression slightly sad, “Brandy? Is all of this true?”
All colour drained from Brandy’s face. Her heart sank like a stone in the water as those final words of Shelton’s question went through her head. Brandy’s expression changed to sadness, and she looked away from him, not wanting to meet his gaze. Then, she looked back at Shelton, took a deep breath, and started to speak.
“Yes, Shelton.” Brandy answered, her voice tinted with sadness and grief. “It’s true. I’ve been dealing with infertility for some time now. It’s one of the reasons why I distanced myself from my family. It was awful.” She took another deep breath to regain her composure. “Do you want to sit down somewhere so I can tell you all of my story on how things went down for me?”
“Sure.” Shelton obliged softly.
They made their way down the sidewalk, where they found a nearby bench. Brandy sat down first, then Shelton sat down next to her.
“So, Brandy,” Shelton began to ask. “How did you find out about your infertility in the first place?”
Brandy took another deep breath, and began her backstory. “Well, back when I was in my 20s after my mum died of cancer, I literally

had no idea that I began to have infertility. And that condition remained with me throughout the years, even when I applied for the pharmacy job as well as when I got a house for myself. And do you know the definition of infertility?" She asked as she turned her head to Shelton.
"Yes." He replied. "It happens when a woman can't have the ability to achieve pregnancy after unprotected you-know-what."
"That's right." Brandy sighed as she dipped her head down. "I was once happy to see my sister start her own family. Her name is Chilli, by the way. But four years ago, when I went to the doctors to ask them questions on whether or not I would be able to start one of my own, they said to me that I couldn't because of my infertile conditions. That made me feel sad." She continued.
"Then what happened?" Shelton asked, his expression still in a state of worry.
"Well," Brandy continued, "You know the old saying "the truth will set you free"? The truth also hurts too." Small tears began to form in Brandy's eyes as she continued, her voice now slowly becoming slightly sorrowful. "After I visited my sister, I revealed the truth to her that I wasn't able to start a family like her. Then, we got into a loud, anger-tempered, fight with each other that lasted for a while, then I just left, story over, no more. And that was the end of it."
More tears began to form as Brandy got into a fetal position and sniffled. Her voice now sounded sad as she continued on. "After I got back to my home, I locked myself in my room, and I grieved so much over the fact that I couldn't get what I wanted. There was no alcohol or smoking involved, but I still kept on crying about my situation."
Shelton let out a slight gasp as he put his hand over his mouth. "Oh, dear." He said. "Brandy, that's awful. Were you able to come up with a solution in order to solve your problem?"
Brandy looked over at Shelton, her eyes still filled with tears. "No, Shelton." She replied sadly. "I didn't."
Shelton gasped again, his expression now changed to concern.

Brandy then looked up into the sky, the clouds hanging overhead. “Because of the current state that I’m in, Chilli said to me that I can’t get the things I wanted.”
“And.. is there another reason why you couldn’t get what you needed because of your infertility?” Shelton asked, his voice also sounding sad, but not as sad as Brandy.
“Yes.” Brandy said, still staring at the clouds. She was staring at a specific group of clouds. Two of them were big, while the other one in the centre was small. This represented what Brandy was desperate to achieve, a family of her own. Brandy then finished answering Shelton’s question, her voice breaking down into a sobbing tone. “Because.. it’s.. not.. meant.. to be.”
Brandy couldn’t hold it back any longer. She buried her face into her hands, and began to cry very hard. Her sobs were grieving, sorrowful, and heart-wrenching. The tears from her eyes ran down her cheeks like a streaming river. Shelton, seeing the awful sight of Brandy sobbing, lets out a loud gasp, his expression now in complete shock, worry, and concern.
“Aw, Brandy,” Shelton said in a sad tone as he shuffled towards her until he was close enough, “You poor little thing. Come here.” He then puts both of his hands on Brandy’s shoulders, then he begins to massage them up and down in order for Brandy to cease the crying and to calm her down. “There, there, Brandy.” Shelton said gently and comfortably. “It’s okay. Does the massaging on the shoulders help make you feel better?”
Brandy uncovered her face, tears still in her eyes, and looked back at Shelton. She sniffled, wiping her hand across her nose. “Yeah. A little bit.” She replied. “I’m very sorry. I didn’t mean to get really emotional like this.” She took some deep breaths to try and regain her composure. She finally settled after one more big deep breath. “Not having a family of my own makes me feel like I’m missing out on one of the most important things in anyone’s lives.” She continued, “And seeing my sister with hers made everything harder for me to cope. And I hardly visited her family.”

Shelton then stopped the shoulder massaging after Brandy finished her story. “So what did you do during those four years?” He asked again.
“I took many deep breaths to try and compose myself, then after my grieving meltdown finally ended, I continued my life of working at the pharmacy store, earning all of the money, working things out with my sister, all of that jazz.” Brandy explained, her frown slightly softening.
Shelton nodded his head understandably. “Do you want me to explain my story to you?” He asked once more. “I had a different, but similar experience like you.”
Brandy looked over at Shelton, her expression now filled with curiosity. “Really?” She asked. “You have? Well, what is your backstory about?”
Shelton turned his body to face Brandy, then he began to tell his backstory. “Back when I was a kid, I was still in school at the time. The school made me super happy, mainly because of my school friends. They made me feel like I was able to fit in with the school and whatnot.” He explained. “But then, during the day I graduated, I was still happy since it was the final day for all of us before the last exams. But after the last exams..” He looked down at the ground before sighing sadly. “I then started to realize that everything from the school I went to, began to suddenly fall out. I never liked being isolated, so having my friends run away from me as I tried to catch up with them..” He sniffled as a tiny tear formed in his eyes. “Made things worse for me.”
Brandy felt bad for Shelton after he finished his explanation about how he hated being alone. Shelton held back his sadness as a small smile began to spread across his face. His smile slowly began to beam more as he continued.
“But,” Shelton said, “My parents said to me that being alone or isolated can be scary to some kids, but that’s okay since it happens to every kid in the world. They said I had nothing to worry about since I still have them and my siblings.” He leaned back on the bench. “And during the time when I once had an apartment, I was finally able to get over being alone or isolated. But, I still wish to

have someone or something with me, which is a pet, or someone to love and be with, or even better, raise a family." He finished.
Brandy, who was listening attentively to the entirety of Shelton's backstory, turned her body to face him. "That must have been pretty tough for you." She said, "But, yeah, you're right. Sometimes things have to change and people move on from it, but that doesn't mean that there's not more love and friendship waiting for us."
Brandy smiled, feeling grateful to have someone to share their story with her. "There's always more love and friendship in the world. And it's wonderful how you got over being alone." She continued.
Shelton smiled back. "Thank you, Brandy." He said.
"Well, I should be the one saying that." Brandy insisted with a chuckle. "Your words really opened the floodgates for me. My infertility is no longer a burden, even though it's still with me."
Shelton and Brandy then looked up into the sky, the sun already painting it with shades of pink, orange, and red. Shelton looked over at Brandy, then thought of something. "Brandy? I looked up the question online about how to cure infertility," He began, "And I finally figured out the solution to your problem. The only thing that will cure an infertile woman.. is an In-Vitro Fertilization surgery, or IVF for short. And I'll be the one to take you to the doctors to get it done."
Brandy's eyes widened with surprise as she gasped at what Shelton had mentioned. She quickly turns around and puts her hands on his waist and gently squeezes him. "Shelton! Does that mean you.." She said before pausing.
"Yes, Brandy." Shelton said as he gently placed one hand on Brandy's arm. "I'll book an IVF appointment for you tomorrow, then, you'll feel like a new and improved version of yourself."
Brandy's face lit up with joy at Shelton's words. She tackled him in an embracing, tight, and comfortable hug. Shelton's back hit the bench as Brandy tackled him. He didn't expect a reaction like this from her, but his expression changed to warmth and joy as he returned the embrace to Brandy. After their embrace broke apart, they sat back up on the bench.

“Brandy? Should we exchange numbers and addresses?” Shelton asked. “I want to make sure I pick you up and take you to the hospital.”
“Of course, Shelton.” Brandy replied. “Here. I’ll write it down for you.” She grabbed out a notepad and pen from her bag.
“I’ll write mine down for you too.” Shelton said as he too grabbed out his own notepad and pen.
After a short while, they gave each other the pieces of paper that had their addresses and numbers on it, then Brandy got up from the bench and grabbed her bag.
“Well, Shelton.” Brandy said as she began to walk to a nearby bus stop, “I better get going back to my home. I really appreciate the unexpected turn of events that you led me to.”
Shelton smiled warmly as he grabbed his backpack. “Take care, Brandy. See you tomorrow.” He said as he walked back to his SUV that was parked in the parking lot.
As Brandy made her way to the bus stop, she looked back to see Shelton in his SUV drive away back to his home. She couldn’t help but feel grateful for the turn that her day had taken. As the bus arrived, she sat down on the seat that was next to one of the windows of the bus. As the bus drove to the direction of where her home was at, she set her elbow on the bus window ledge and rested her head on her hand. She already knew that she wasn’t alone in facing her struggles with infertility. The mention of the IVF surgery by Shelton had made her feel much happier than she already was. And she knew that tomorrow would be the day that everything was going to change for her. The day where she will finally break free from her troubles, and enter into a world of excitement, joy, and happiness.
The next morning arose. Brandy was asleep in her bed. She was dreaming about what things will be like for her when Shelton gives her a trip to the doctors for an IVF surgery. But when the morning sunlight began to caress her body, her eyelids began to open slightly. She yawned, stretched her arms, then she went downstairs to have some breakfast. Suddenly, her phone buzzed.
“Huh?” She said as she picked up her phone.

It was a text from none other than Shelton. The text read this:
“Good morning, Brandy. Just here to remind you that I called the doctors this morning. I asked them to book an appointment for you somewhere around lunchtime at 12:30 PM. I’ll be picking you up soon. See you there.”
Brandy smiled. She texted Shelton back, saying that she’ll be ready once lunchtime hits. After she sent the text, Brandy continued to have her breakfast, which was her usual protein cereal. As she ate, she looked out the window and stared into the sky.
“I still wonder how things will go for me once I’m there at the hospital.” She thought to herself.
After she finished her breakfast, she went upstairs to her bathroom, locked the door, and began to get herself showered up for the coming day of her IVF surgery. While Brandy was in the shower, putting her usual shampoo and conditioner in her hair as well as the body wash all over her fur, she hummed away to her heart’s content while she scrubbed and cleaned herself until she was all wet and soaking. She continued to hum away as she dried herself off with her towel and combed her fur alongside her side hairs.
Brandy sighs with content as she finishes combing her left side hairs. “Much better.” She said as she looked into the mirror.
After freshening up after breakfast, Brandy retrieved her green bag, grabbed her wallet, grabbed her keys, then went downstairs into the kitchen to retrieve her phone. Afterwards, she sat down on the living room couch and watched some television while she waited for Shelton to arrive. By the time noon came around, Brandy heard a car pulling up outside of her home. She opened up the window blinds to see Shelton driving his SUV next to the curb and the sidewalk. Brandy then grabbed her bag and opened the front door. Shelton rolled down the window of his car.
“G’day, Brandy.” Shelton called out, cupping his right hand on his mouth while his left hand was on the steering wheel. “Ready for your surgery appointment?”
“Yes.” Brandy said as she walked over to the car, opened the door, and got into the passenger seat. She sighed contentedly as she

slumped down on the seat. “I’m a little nervous about this whole thing, but I’m sure it will go well.”
As Shelton pulled out from the curb and onto the road, he spoke to Brandy about what she said about being nervous about the surgery.
“Well, you know, Brandy, there’s always a risk involved when it comes to surgery. You might live, or you might die, but all that matters is that they’ll just have you sit on the chair, then they’ll do the procedure like normal after everything is prepped.”
“And how long does this kind of surgery go on for?” Brandy asked.
“Uh.. I’d say it takes about 30 minutes so it’s not that long.” Shelton replied.
“Oh.” Brandy said understandably. She then decided to change the subject of their conversation as they drew nearer to the hospital.
“And uh.. What type of car is this? I’ve never seen a left-sided driver's car like this.”
“This, Brandy, is what’s known as a 2006 Chevrolet Trailblazer.” Shelton answered. “I bought this car for myself. And the crazy part? This is actually an import from America.”
“America?” Brandy questioned, amazed at the fact that Shelton shared with her. “Wow. That’s quite far from here. But doesn’t America also see Australia as an upside-down version of America?”
Shelton laughed. “Well, I’m not offended by other folks saying that Australia makes things upside-down or something, I just think it’s chuckle-worthy to me.”
Brandy laughed with him. “Yeah, I’m not offended by that either.”
As they continued to chat, their conversation and laughter filling the air, they finally made it to the hospital just 10 minutes away from Brandy’s appointment time.
“Here we are.” Shelton said as he turned the car off and took the key out of the ignition.
As they stepped out of the car, Brandy took a deep breath and exhaled softly. Then Shelton held out his hand.
“Come on, Brandy. I’ll hold your hand along the way.” He said.
Brandy felt her heart flutter as Shelton held out his hand. She couldn’t help but hold Shelton’s hand anyway. Together, hand in hand, they made their way into the hospital. One of the employees,

who was a King Charles Spaniel, looked up from their desk and saw the both of them walk in.
“Hello.” They said, “Are you the one who booked the 12:30 PM appointment?”
“Yes.” Shelton replied, “But I’m not the one getting operated on.” He points to Brandy. “She is.”
“Um.. Yes.” Brandy said. “He booked the appointment for me, actually.”
“I see. And what do you, love, have that we can deal with?” The employee asked.
“I have infertility.” Brandy replied, “And I came here to ask if you can help cure me with an IVF procedure.”
The employee thought for a moment. “Come with me. I’ll take you to the surgeon's room. I’ll let them know when you’ll be coming.” They said, getting up from the chair.
As Shelton and Brandy followed the employee, the latter began to speak. “So, Shelton. I know it’s a bit of a weird question, but what’s your birthday and how old are you?”
“No, no, it’s okay.” Shelton replied. “I can share it with you. My birthday is June 17th, 1977. And I’m currently 43 years old.”
“No way!” Brandy said in amazement. “That’s my birthday too. I’m also the same age as you as well.”
Shelton laughed. “Well, what a coincidence, am I right?”
Brandy laughed too. “Yeah. And, uh.. Is there anything that you like? Like, what are your favourite hobbies, interests, or favourite things in the whole, entire world?” She asked again.
“Well,” Shelton replied, “I like to be a bit of a gamer, make some amazing art, and I’m also really athletic and acrobatic, even for my age. And my interests are reading books, machines, animation, dinosaurs, giant monsters, music, and exercising. My most favourite things in the entire world are Godzilla, Coldplay, Eragon, and live-action sitcoms that range from F.R.I.E.N.D.S, The Big Bang Theory, Seinfeld, The Office, or Parks And Recreation.”
“Wow.” Brandy said. “You have quite the taste. Well, I like to be stylish, and I also like to take the transit system a lot. Mainly because I have that anxiety that forces me to not drive a car of my

own. So that's why I always take the bus back to my home. Anyway, I also like making my own homemade foods and drinks, and I like watching sitcoms and listening to music too. Mainly the ones that you mentioned."
"Nice." Shelton said, giving Brandy a gentle fist bump on her shoulder.
Brandy couldn't help but smile. Then finally, after walking down hallways and going down the elevator, they made their way to the surgeon's room. The employee opened the doors.
"You're just in time, miss." They said, checking their watch.
The surgeons stood by the chair, awaiting the arrival of Brandy.
"Please take a seat." One of them said, gesturing to the surgery chair.
Brandy obliged, and sat on the chair. The surgeons leaned the chair back and lifted it up so that it can be easier to operate her. Shelton then walked over to Brandy and beamed. Brandy looked over at Shelton while the surgeons were getting the tools ready.
"What will the results say after they finish?" She asked softly.
"You'll see soon." Shelton replied, his voice also soft. "I won't spoil it for you. But I'll show you once we head outside."
Afterwards, Shelton went out of the room and sat on one of the chairs and began to wait. One of the surgeons, who is a Chihuahua, went up to Brandy and gave her some options.
"Miss? Just so you know, the procedure will not result in you getting pregnant, but you will still have fresh and fertilized sperm eggs inserted into your system that will still give you the ability to achieve pregnancy." They explained.
"I understand." Brandy replied. "I just hope the results will be good."
"They will." The Chihuahua surgeon said. "We'll call in your friend and let him know that the results will be ready."
With that, the surgeons began the IVF procedure on Brandy. They did the usual way of doing the ovarian stimulation, egg retrieval, fertilization, and so on and so forth, but since they still inserted fresh sperm eggs into Brandy's systems, they still prevented her from becoming pregnant, yet still giving her the ability to achieve it. The procedure only took 30 minutes, and by the time they were done,

one of the surgeons came into the room where Shelton was waiting in, and ushered him in.
“Sir?” They whispered. “The results are being printed.”
Shelton, grinning with pride, followed the surgeon into the surgeon’s room, and there, they handed Shelton the results. Shelton read every detail, nodding at the requirements that are given after the procedure. His eyes widened at what one of the details said. It said that they have managed to give the fresh and fertilized sperm eggs a treatment that will stay in Brandy’s systems for a whole year and 35 extra days, making it 400 days.
“Oh, my goodness.” Shelton said, putting his hand on his mouth before smiling. “I didn’t think that it was possible for you to do something like this.”
“Well, sir.” One of the surgeons said, “We thought that it would be a good idea to give those fresh and fertilized sperm eggs that ability to stay in the systems of your pal for that long. We also ran some experiments on this treatment while we purchased them from the sperm donor. So far, the treatment will go well.”
“Thank you for the explanation, sir.” Shelton replied. “And I’ll still remember to make sure I give my friend all of the recommended things that are listed in order to prevent any problems from ever occurring.”
“Thank you for your cooperation, sir.” The surgeon said to Shelton, the latter of which rolled up the result paper and held it in his hand. “And since you were the one that booked the appointment for your friend, you’ll have to pay.”
“Okay.” Shelton said, raising a brow curiously. “How much is it?”
“8000 AU dollars.” Replied the surgeon.
“Hmm. Yeah, I can pay for that kind of money.” Shelton said, “After all, I did earn a lot of money from a lottery ticket.”
After Shelton paid for the 8000 AU dollar fee and thanked the surgeons, he went over to Brandy, who had just got up from the chair that she was sitting on.
“I got the result paper.” Shelton said, “I’ll show you what it says once we get to the car.”

Brandy nodded in silence. As they walked out of the hospital, they finally made their way to the car.
“So?” Brandy began. “Do you want to show it to me now?”
“Sure.” Shelton said as he unrolled the paper and handed it to Brandy.
Brandy looked all over the result paper, her eyes scanning each word as she nodded her head understandably at the important details as well as the results of giving her the ability to achieve pregnancy. But once she got to the sperm egg treatment part, she gasped in shock. Usually, the sperm after an IVF surgery lasts for 4 to 5 days, but once she read that the fresh and fertilized sperm eggs will remain in her body for 400 days, this made her squeal in excitement.
“Oh, my goodness!” Brandy exclaimed happily. “This is wonderful!”
“So what do you think?” Shelton asked as Brandy handed the result paper back to him.
“This is wonderful, Shelton.” Brandy said, her eyes filling with tears of happiness. “In all my life, I’ve dreamed of wanting to start a family of my own, and now I finally have the ability to achieve pregnancy! But the whole sperm egg treatment is what really made me happy.”
Brandy then let out a sigh of contentment. She was happy that she was finally able to have the ability to achieve pregnancy, and it was all thanks to Shelton. Brandy’s expression then turned to sly.
Shelton didn’t know what that meant, but Brandy was about to give him a big surprise.
“You know, Shelton.” Brandy said slowly and softly as she walked up to him. “I want to give you something as a way of thanking you for helping me achieve the things that I wanted so bad in my whole life.”
“What do you mean?” Shelton asked as he leaned back on his SUV. “What is it that you want to give me?”
Brandy then reached her hands out and gently squeezed Shelton’s shoulders. “This.” Brandy replied slyly.
“Wait.” Shelton said, getting a bit nervous. “What are you-”

Shelton’s sentence was cut off by Brandy pulling him close to her face and her soft lips pressing against his own in a tender and cherishing kiss. Shelton’s eyes widened at the sudden moment, but then his eyelids began to close as he melted into the cherishing lip-to-lip embrace. Then, Shelton closed his eyes and returned the kiss to Brandy, pouring all of his love and devotion into her. As Brandy and Shelton continued their makeout session, their hands gently and slowly caressing each other’s bodies in a smooth motion, they finally broke their lips apart from each other. The two of them stared into each other's eyes after their first ever kiss.
“Woah.” Shelton said, his voice sounding a bit dazed from what Brandy did. “That felt amazing.”
Brandy giggled at Shelton’s reaction. “I just thought I’d give you that.” She said, “You really did a good job helping me achieve the things that I wanted. From what my sister said, I thought that it wasn’t meant to be, but thanks to you, I am forever grateful..”
Brandy then put her mouth up to Shelton’s ear. “My saviour.” She whispered.
Shelton grinned as Brandy’s words flowed into his ears. “You are truly welcome, you wonderful woman.” He said softly.
Brandy blushed at the compliment, giggling again.
“And I have something planned for the both of us for tomorrow night.” Shelton continued.
“Wow.” Brandy said, “Already?”
“Yep.” Shelton replied. “And I’ll tell you all about it tomorrow the next time I text you.” He then opened the door of his SUV and got into the driver’s seat. He watched as Brandy got into the passenger seat and buckled the seat belt. As Shelton began driving Brandy back to her place, Brandy began to speak up again.
“I gotta say, Shelton.” She said happily. “That IVF wasn’t all that bad. I’m not an expert in doctor related things since I only work as a pharmacist, but how long does it usually take for the sperm eggs to stay in the body after IVF?”
“4 to 5 days.” Shelton replied. “But because they ran some experiments, the treatment of having the sperm eggs stay in a woman's system for a whole year or longer worked amazingly well.”

Brandy nodded her head. “Yeah, I never knew that something like that was feasible until now.” She said as she leaned her head back on the seat.
As the both of them continued to chat, they finally arrived at Brandy’s house. She grabbed her bag and got out of the car, closing the door behind her. Shelton then rolled down the window so he could speak to Brandy again.
“Thank you again, Shelton, for everything that I have ever wanted.” Brandy cheerfully said.
“No problem.” Shelton said back. “And I’ll think of what we can do for tomorrow night for the next time we meet.”
Brandy blew a kiss to Shelton and waved. “See you later, handsome.” She said happily.
“See you later, baby.” Shelton said also while he gave Brandy the finger gun.
Brandy chuckled as she watched Shelton drive off back to his home. Afterwards, she got back into her house, cooked herself some dinner, cleaned up the kitchen, then got back into her bed. It had been quite a day for Brandy. She couldn’t help but still feel extremely grateful for Shelton giving her the things that she was desperate to get, the ability to achieve pregnancy, the soon-to-be chance of starting her own family, and the inclusion of making a brand new friend. The thought about Shelton’s planned night-out was kept in her head. She was not sure about what it would be, but she still felt happy about the fact that she was finally able to break free from the dark world of infertility, and finally able to be brought into a brighter and happier world with a new friend, and the soon-to-be family that she will soon have.
The next morning arrived at Brandy’s house. Brandy, awakened by her alarm clock going off, reaches her hand out and presses the button, which turns it off. She then sits up, yawns, and rubs her eyes.
Brandy sighs. “Another day, another chance to see Shelton again.” She said as she got up from the bed to go downstairs to have her usual breakfast.

Meanwhile, at Shelton’s place, Shelton was doing the same thing. He ate his breakfast, then he drank the milk out of the bowl after he ate all of the cereal that was in the bowl. Shelton inhales, then he exhales long and soft.
“Now that’s refreshing.” He said as he put the dishes into the dishwasher.
Shelton then went into the pantry and grabbed the bird food. Then, he made his way outside and into his bird house where his four macaws were sitting. His macaws were absolutely gorgeous. Their beautiful colours stood out to them. They were all male since Shelton didn’t want to have any bird babies littering his mansion. As Shelton opened the door to the bird house, he greeted his birds joyfully.
“G’day, boys!” He said, “I have your morning breakfast for you.”
The macaws squawked loudly as Shelton opened the bird food bag. Because of how loud his macaws are, he put some sound pads all around the room except for the roof of the bird house. Shelton had set it up that way because it would not be able to bother his nextdoor neighbours if his macaws squawked loudly. As Shelton gave each of his macaws a morning snack, he patted each of their heads, their feathers soft and smooth. The macaws squawked happily as he patted their heads.
“You are still the best pets I’ve had.” Shelton said to his birds. “Now I’ll be heading back to my mansion. You boys better behave yourselves.”
One of his macaws lets out a squawk at the reminder from Shelton.
“Good boys.” Shelton said happily. “ See you, mates.”
As Shelton exited the bird house, he went back into his mansion, went to the living room area, then laid down on the couch. He then began to think back on what happened yesterday when Brandy gave him a kiss after he gave her an IVF surgery.
“Oh, yeah.” He said as he remembered what he said to her. “I have to plan a night out somewhere. There’s so many choices, that I can’t decide what to pick.”
Shelton began to think for a moment, before an idea finally came to his head.

“Aha!” He said as he raised his finger in the air once the idea came into his head. “I’ll invite her to a restaurant. But the real question is, what restaurant should I pick for the both of us?”
Shelton pondered the next question for a bit before the next idea came into his head.
“I’m sure that Brandy will like this restaurant choice.” Shelton said as he grabbed out his phone to text Brandy. “The Chopped Leaf.”
After Shelton’s restaurant choice was picked, he began texting Brandy. This is what he typed:
“Hey, Brandy.
I hope you had a great day yesterday after the surgery. I was thinking about what place we should go to, which I think would be a splendid idea since yesterday when you kissed me on the lips.
I picked a nice restaurant for the both of us. The restaurant is called “The Chopped Leaf”. I know you’ll love this restaurant as much as I do. And the time for our dinner will be 5:30PM.
So make sure you’re dressed nicely and I’ll be picking you up at 5:00PM tonight. See you there.
Love, Shelton.”
After typing the message, Shelton sent it to Brandy.
Meanwhile, Brandy had just finished putting all of the dishes away after she had her breakfast. Just then, her phone buzzed. She grabbed her phone, and saw the message that Shelton sent to her. After reading the whole thing, she couldn’t help but grin at the invitation to The Chopped Leaf. “Oh, wow.” She beamed. “This is wonderful. I’ve never been there, but I’m sure this will sound lovely.”
Brandy sent Shelton a message back, saying that she’ll be delighted to go out with him to The Chopped Leaf. After she sent Shelton the message, she then got a reply from him. It said:
“Great! See you there, baby.”
Followed by the reply was some heart and kiss emojis.
Brandy giggled and her cheeks flushed red after reading the reply. “Oh, Shelton. He’s a very delightful person.” She said soothingly.
The second half of the day went by normally. Shelton was having some lunch at his mansion while Brandy had lunch at her house. On

Shelton’s side of things, he finished his lunch and was putting the dishes into his dishwasher. He didn’t order anything, nor did he go and get some food at a restaurant, he had some leftovers.
As time went by, Shelton continued doing his regular way of doing things in his mansion. He watched TV, he spent time with his macaws, he cleaned his bed, all that jazz.
But when 4:30pm came, Shelton went into his closet, and began looking for the right suit to wear for his planned dinner date with Brandy.
“Now what should I wear?” He asked himself. “There’s gotta be a good one somewhere in this closet.”
He slowly walked through his closet, scanning for the rightful suit to wear, until he found the rightful one.
“Ah..” Shelton said as he found his jet black suit and bowtie. “This should be a good suit to wear.”
It took a few minutes to put on the suit, but after Shelton finally put it on, he went into his bathroom and looked at himself in the mirror. He gave his reflection the finger guns as he gave off a smirk.
“Looking good, Shel.” He said, “Now you’re sure to surprise Brandy with this look.”
After he made one final adjustment to his bowtie and combed his front hair back just to make it smooth, he headed downstairs to the front door, grabbed his keys and wallet, and headed out the door to go and pick up Brandy.
As soon as Shelton arrived, he got out of the car to knock on Brandy’s door.
“Oh, Brandy.” Shelton called out after knocking on the door five times. “I’m here to pick you up. Are you ready?”
After Shelton called out to Brandy, the door opened, and what Shelton saw, made his eyes widen and gave out a wolf whistle. There, standing in front of him after the door opened, was Brandy herself.
She was dressed in a beautiful red nightgown, she had a daisy in her hair, and the most astounding bit about how she looked was that she was wearing makeup which included lipstick, the eyeshadow, and longer eyelashes.

“Hey there, Shelton.” Brandy said joyfully, holding her hands together and making a jovial expression while her bag rested on her shoulder. “Do you like my nightgown?”
“Baby, your nightgown is gorgeous. You look very lovely, especially with the makeup.” Shelton said happily.
Brandy giggled as she blushed red. “Thank you.” She said, “And look at that suit. You look really dashing, Shelton.”
“Aww, thank you, Brandy.” Shelton said as his cheeks blushed red as well. “Now shall we head to The Chopped Leaf?”
“Lets.” Brandy replied as she followed Shelton to the car and got into the seat.
After their seatbelts were buckled, Shelton turned on the ignition, and at last, they drove to The Chopped Leaf. It took only a few minutes to find the restaurant, but as soon as they got there, Shelton parked his car, then he and Brandy got out of the car. Together, they made their way to the entrance. As they walked in, they couldn’t help but smile as they admired the interior of the place.
“Wow.” Brandy said softly and slowly. “This is amazing. How many times have you been here?”
“I’ve been here many times in my life.” Shelton replied. “I always go for the caesar salad since that tends to be my favourite kind of salad.”
Just then, the waitress, who was a Belgian Malinois, came by when they caught sight of Brandy and Shelton.
“Hello.” They said, greeting them with a wave. “How are you two doing today?”
“Good.” Shelton replied. “We’re doing just fine.”
“Great.” The waitress said joyfully. “There’s a seat just over there for the both of you.”
“Thank you.” Brandy said as she and Shelton sat down in their seats on either side from each other next to the window.
The waitress then grabbed out their pen and notepad. “Care for any drinks?” They asked.
“I’ll just have a regular glass of water, please.” Shelton replied.

“I’ll have a regular glass of water as well, please.” Brandy replied also.
“Ok.” The waitress said as they wrote down the order for their drinks. “Your orders will be here soon.”
As the waitress went to get their drink order, Shelton and Brandy took their moment to look out the window to see all of the pedestrians walking down the street.
“So, Brandy,” Shelton spoke up. “Have you been here before, or is this your first time?”
“Uh..” Brandy pondered before replying. “I have been here maybe a few times before, but I just have a sandwich here. I buy salads from the store.”
“I see.” Shelton said, “What’s your favourite sandwich from The Chopped Leaf?”
“So far,” Brandy replied. “My favourite sandwich from this place is the cranberry pesto. Really delicious sandwich, I tell you.”
Shelton nodded his head in agreement. After a while of chatting and telling stories, the waitress came and served them their drinks. The two of them took a moment to sip their glasses of water. They felt extremely refreshed after a nice drink of the average everyday liquid. The ice cubes in the drinks clattered gently along the edges of the glass as Shelton and Brandy took a sip each time. The waitress came back again with the notepad and pen ready for them to write down their actual orders.
“So have you decided what you like to eat?” They asked.

“Sure.” Shelton said as he went first. “I’ll have the caesar salad, please.”
“And I’ll have the cranberry pesto sandwich, please.” Brandy said also.
The waitress wrote down their order. “Okay. Your orders will arrive soon.” They said, writing down the cranberry pesto that Brandy ordered.
As the waitress walked off to get their orders ready, Shelton began to speak up again.

“So about the address that I gave to you during the day before yesterday,” Shelton began. “My house isn’t exactly a house at all. It’s a mansion.”
“A mansion?” Brandy questioned with curiosity.
“Yes.” Shelton continued. “And I’ll tell you how I got it.” He leaned in a bit closer to Brandy before he went on. “I got the mansion to myself four years ago. And how I got it was from a lottery ticket I bought. It didn’t cost anything. Those lottery tickets were free. After I got one, I watched the TV to see if the number on my ticket would come up. Somehow, it did. Do you want to know how much the cash prize was?”
“Free lottery tickets, eh?” Brandy asked, still curious. “And what was the amount of money?”
“The amount of money for that lottery ticket,” Shelton leaned in closer to whisper into Brandy’s ear. “It was 50 million AU dollars. And guess what? I won it.” Shelton said, sitting back down with a smirk on his face.
Brandy’s eyes widened at the cash prize that Shelton had won. She never thought that anyone in the world would earn that much money, but this surprised her. “Oh, my gosh.” Brandy whispered. “50 million AU dollars? How is that possible? You must have been lucky.”
“You bet, baby.” Shelton said, “I even felt surprised about winning that much money. So I put all of that into my bank account. The mansion itself cost 10 million Au dollars. So after I bought the property, I moved into it. Then I bought more things like some pets, my car, all the stuff I need for the mansion like food and whatnot, and pretty much other things.”
“Well, isn’t that wonderful?” Brandy said, “You must be the luckiest man that I have ever met.”
After a short moment, the waitress returned with their food. “Here you go, you two.” They said cheerfully. “Enjoy your food.”
Shelton and Brandy thanked the waitress and began to chew their food. Shelton ate his salad while Brandy ate her sandwich. As they were eating their food, Brandy began to speak.
“How’s your salad, Shelton?” She asked.

“Delightful.” Shelton replied cheerfully. “How’s your sandwich?”
“Oh, it’s really amazing to say the least.” Brandy replied also. “The sauce makes it better to eat once you dip the food in there.” She then looked at Shelton again, eager to hear more about his current life. “So is there anything else you want to share with me?”
Shelton nodded his head. “Yes. This one is about my macaws.” He began. “I got four of those beauties. And they’re all male birds too. And these guys are the most gorgeous beings that I’ve ever adopted. Wanna know what their names are?”
“What are their names, exactly?” Brandy asked.
“Their names are Clark, Lance, Marcel, and Stewart.” Shelton replied. “Each of them have their own unique personalities despite having the personality of an average everyday macaw. You know, being smart and loud.”
Brandy laughed at the names of Shelton’s macaws. “They all sound like a fun bunch.” She said, “And on a scale of 1 to 10, how well-behaved are they?”
Shelton grinned. “A definite 10, babe.” He replied. “All birds of this type are super smart, obviously. And I wanted to adopt a bird like this not just because of their bright and beautiful colours and their smartness, but because they helped me not feel lonely anymore.”
Brandy smiled warmly. She couldn’t help but feel such appreciation and awe for Shelton. From his stories about his lucky fortune, to his story about his birds, Brandy was truly in a world of friendship with her new boyfriend. As they finished up with their food, they waited until the waitress came back and collected the plates.
“How was the food?” They asked.
“Delicate and delicious.” Shelton and Brandy said in unison.
“Good to hear.” The waitress said, “Now do you want a receipt, or no?”
As the waitress grabbed out the credit card register device, Brandy raised her hand. “We’ll take a receipt, please. I’ll pay for it all.” She said as she pulled out her wallet.
Shelton was surprised by this. “Woah. Brandy that’s very thoughtful of you. Why are you paying for all of it?” He asked.

Brandy turned to Shelton with a warm smile. “Shelton. You’ve been so kind to invite me out to The Chopped Leaf today, it was the least that I can do.” She said softly.
“Aww.” Shelton cooed, clutching his chest gently. “You’re the most thoughtful woman ever. Thanks.”
Brandy blushed, then she paid for the food and got the receipt afterwards.
“Thank you.” The waitress said, “Enjoy the rest of your day, you two.”
As Shelton and Brandy made their way out of the restaurant, and back to the SUV, Shelton then had an idea in his head. He thought about having his new girlfriend stay over at his mansion for one night. He knew that Brandy would fall head over heels in love with his beautiful mansion.
“Hey, Brandy.” Shelton said, turning to face Brandy. “Do you want to spend the night at my place? You’ll love it there as much as I do.”
Brandy thought about that for a bit. “Shelton, I would love to visit your mansion. It would be nice to see what you have going on at your place.”
Shelton beamed. “Well, then hop on inside, M’lady. Your ride awaits you.” He said in a gentlemanly manner before opening the passenger door for Brandy.
Brandy giggled at Shelton’s gesture. “Why thank you very much, Sir Shelton.”
Shelton laughed as well. He then closed the passenger door, then got on the driver side, closed the driver door, and buckled his seat belt.
“First of all,” Brandy added. “I want to get some of my stuff first before I see what your mansion is like.”
“Okay.” Shelton replied as he turned on the ignition. “First stop, your house.”
As they drove out of the restaurant parking lot, Brandy leaned the chair back, then leaned herself back onto the seat, putting her hands behind her head and sighing happily, the hum of the engine of Shelton’s car lulling her to sleep. The drive back to Brandy’s place wasn’t far, but once Brandy gets her stuff together to spend the

night with her new boyfriend, things will go grandly for Brandy once she sees Shelton mansion for the very first time.
During the afternoon, Shelton was in his SUV, parked next to the curb where Brandy's house sits, and he was scrolling through his phone as he waited for his girlfriend to come out of the door. Then, the door opened, and there was Brandy. She not only had her usual green bag, but she also had an extra bag with her that had all of her belongings. Shelton unlocked the SUV door for Brandy, then Brandy put her bags in the back seat, then she got on the passenger seat up front. She closed the door, buckled her seat belt, and looked at Shelton with a happy expression.
"I got all my things, Shelton." Brandy said happily. "I double checked to make sure I had all the things I needed to spend a night or two at your place."
"That's great." Shelton also said happily. "I think two nights at my place would be good for you, what do you think?"
"I would love to spend two nights with you." Brandy replied. "I don't know what your mansion would look like, but-"
"I think you'll love my mansion." Shelton said, cutting off Brandy. "Let's not get too excited about it, okay?"
Brandy giggled. "Okay, okay, Shelton." She said, "I'll hold it in."
Shelton smirked as he turned on the ignition. As they finally drove off to head to the mansion, Brandy laid back on the seat and sighed.
It took a long while, but as Shelton finally made it back to his mansion, he grinned. He then turned to Brandy, who was still resting from the long trip down the road.
"Babe. We're here." Shelton said, gently shaking Brandy's shoulder.
Brandy began to open her eyelids. She gently rubbed them as she put the seat up.
"We're here?" She asked.
"Yep." Shelton replied. "I just gotta open the gates first."
Shelton got out of his SUV, walked to the gates with the words reading "Welcome" on both sides, and began to type in the password on the keypad. Since the gates were automatic, the doors began to open after Shelton typed the password on the keypad. Shelton then got back into his SUV and drove the car through. The

doors automatically closed. After Shelton parked his SUV outside of the garage, he turned the car off, went to the other side, and opened the door for Brandy, offering her his hand as she stepped out of the vehicle.
“Well, baby? What do you think of it?” Shelton asked Brandy as they walked to the front of the mansion.
Brandy’s eyes widened as she looked all around the building. The mansion was 3 stories tall with a balcony area on the rooftop. The design of the mansion itself was beautiful. Brandy couldn’t believe her own eyes.
“Wow.” She breathed. “Shelton, this looks amazing on the outside.”
“Wait until you see the interior.” Shelton smirked, raising a finger. “Come on.”
Brandy followed Shelton to the front door. As Shelton stepped onto the welcome mat, he brushed his feet on it before getting the key to his mansion and putting the key into the lock. Brandy was still following behind after Shelton got the door open. She was about to walk in with Shelton before Shelton put his hand out in front of her, stopping her in her tracks.
“Wait.” Shelton said, his tone sounding like an airplane announcer. “Please make sure to wipe your feet in case they're dirty.”
Brandy looked down at the welcome mat. It was dark green, fuzzy and soft, and it had a phrase on it. The phrase read, “Paradise In Oz”. Brandy chuckled at the slang in the welcome mat before stepping on it and brushing her feet on it. Shelton then cleared his throat quietly before putting his hands behind his back.
“Brandy Cattle,” He said, bowing low in a gentlemanly fashion and pointing his hands in the direction of where Brandy was going. “Welcome to my beautiful and wonderful paradise.”
As soon as Brandy walked through the door and into the mansion, her eyes widened even more than before. She gasped as she took in the opulent surroundings of the interior.
“Oh, my goodness.” She said slowly, her voice soft and low.
The entrance hallway was spacious and grand. Next to them, was a sweeping staircase that went all the way up and down to the basement area and the next 2 floors and the rooftop. The floors that

Shelton and Brandy walked on are polished marble, the walls that Brandy examined are the same material as the wall, the walls also had expensive-looking art pieces, most of them were either pictures of famous people, and some were of Shelton's relatives. As they walked through the grand hallway of the mansion, they ended up at the living area with chairs, couches, and a fireplace accompanying it.

"Shelton." Brandy said, almost sounding like she's about to faint. "This is just.."

She paused her words, turning to Shelton with a jovial expression on her face.

"This is just gorgeous." She said, finishing what she was stuttering to say. "I love this living area along with that hallway."

"Every room in my place is very spacious." Shelton replied. He then pointed to the fully-stocked bar on the left. "This is my bar where I have some strong drinks. I usually just go for a diet soda."

"Oh, wow. A fully-stocked bar in your home." Brandy said astonishingly.

Shelton then pointed to the right. "That is the kitchen and dining area, as you would have expected." He said.

"Your kitchen is bigger than mine." Brandy said, almost sounding speechless. "Even the dining table is huge, and the chairs are fancy."

"I've got all the types, babe." Shelton added. "The spinning chairs, the stationary ones, recliners, and the big comfy couches."

Brandy giggled before moving on to the next area. They walked to the next door. This one leads into the backyard. As Shelton opened the door, he and Brandy walked outside to get a good view of the backyard.

"So this is my backyard." Shelton explained as he began pointing out each building in the backyard. "This is my lovely swimming pool. The pool cleaner is already there. Over there, is where all of the floats are as well as my very own jacuzzi. Just the usual donut floaties, noodle floaties, and water guns. Over there at the very back there is the shed, where I keep all of my stuff for mowing the lawn. I also keep a drivable lawn mower there. My gardening stuff is in

there too. That is my garden. This is where I grow all of my beautiful flowers. And finally, we have the bird house. This is where I go to feed my gorgeous macaws. You'll meet them later on."
"Your backyard is amazing, Shelton." Brandy said, amazed by all of it. "I really love the big pool."
They then went inside and into the garage. "This is my garage interior. This is where my cars go." Shelton explained again. He then points to his other car. "That sports car right there? That is a 2018 Brabham BT62. Expensive, but really gorgeous car, that is."
"I can see." Brandy smirked. "And do you keep all of the other tools in here?"

"Yes." Selton replied. "And I also own an A Class Motorhome. I keep it tarped in a sheet. So whenever I decide to go camping, I can unwrap it from the tarp, then I get my gear, then I head out to the open road to any campsite there is."
Brandy nodded her head understandably. "Do you also own a speed boat with its own trailer? I'm just curious."
"I do." Shelton replied. "It's a Malibu speed boat. And I also have a trailer hitch that attaches to my SUV. So whenever I need to tow my boat, or tow the trailer that I use to store my sports car whenever I go to a car show, I can do the same things like my motorhome."
"Two trailers for a specific vehicle?" Brandy said, almost sounding speechless. "You're really something else when it comes to owning certain things, you know that?"
"Who cares?" Shelton laughed. "I'm rich."
Next, they made their way up to the second floor by going up the spiraling staircase. Their next stop was a spare bedroom.
"This, babe, is one of the 6 spare bedrooms with their own closet and bathroom." Shelton explained. "All of these spare bedrooms are the same on the second and on the third floor."
"Right." Brandy nodded. "I guess six spare bedrooms are better than one."
They chuckled before moving on to the bonus room.

“This is my bonus room.” Shelton explained again. “In here, you’ve got the big 8K Television, and on the shelves next to and below the TV, are game consoles as well as games for the specific console.”
“Wow.” Brandy said, “You were right about you being a gamer. No wonder why you have those consoles.”
As they walked out of the bonus room, Brandy began to speak again.
“By the way, I also like the balcony that looks over the main floor.” She commented.
“Do you, now?” Shelton smirked. “Well, that’s why the third floor has another balcony that looks over the main floor too. But, let’s head to the very top.”
As Shelton and Brandy made their way to the rooftop of the house, Shelton opened the doors, and Brandy widened her eyes at what she was seeing. Of course it was a balcony, but this one was bigger and more spacious.

“Crikey.” Brandy exclaimed before pointing to the telescope. “You even have your own telescope up here.”
She looked through the telescope and awed with amazement. She couldn’t help but feel more astonished about the rooftop balcony than the backyard.
“Neat, eh?” Shelton asked.
“Shelton, this telescope makes viewing the neighbourhood of Brisbane even more stunning.” Brandy replied. “I love it.”
Shelton chuckled bashfully before gently squeezing Brandy’s hand and taking her back inside. “Next stop, is the basement.” He said.
They walked down the spiraling staircase like a swirling tornado as they made their way down to the basement area.
“This is my basement.” Shelton explained once more. “This is the first part of it, which is the dance floor. It’s where I keep all things related to a typical everyday dance floor.”
“I see.” Brandy nodded. “Anything else in the basement?
“I’ll show you.” Shelton said, walking to each room while he explained everything. “This room is the music room, where I keep all of these instruments. This is my studio, where I have some

greenscreen sheets if I want to make a trending video or fancy image. This is my workout area, where I keep a ton of workout equipment. And this is my storage area, where stuff that I don't use anymore gets put in here for safe keeping."
"Even your whole basement is organized." Brandy said, "So is that it?"
Shelton chuckled again. "No." He said, "There's still more to see. Come on, baby, I'll show you my macaws."
They made their way back to the main floor, Shelton settled Brandy down on one of the dining room chairs, and he went outside to get his macaws from the bird house. At the bird house, the macaws were settling in before Shelton opened the door. They squawked as Shelton entered the building.
"Come on, boys." He said in a sing-songy tone. "I have a special guest for you to meet."
The macaws obliged and walked to his arms to hang on. Shelton exited the door of the bird house and closed the door behind him. Then he went inside of his mansion to greet Brandy.
"Hello." Shelton cheerfully said to Brandy as he walked through the door, mindful of his macaws on his arms. "I want you to meet my four gorgeous macaws."
Shelton held out his arms. The macaws eyed Brandy with curiosity before squawking with joy when seeing her for the first time.
"Brandy." Shelton announced as he presented his birds. "This is Clark, Lance, Marcel, and Stewart."
"Woah." Brandy astonishedly said, "These birds of yours are oh, so adorable."
She reached her hand out to let one of them inspect her. Clark, the scarlet macaw, walked onto Brandy's arm before cooing with joy and rubbing his head on hers.
Brandy giggled as Clark rubbed his head on hers. "I love their colours." She said, "They are very beautiful."
"I know." Shelton replied. "That's why I adopted them. Because their colours are bright and that's the point of how gorgeous they are."
"And how often do they do their business of dropping their bombs?" Brandy asked. "And are they potty-trained?"

“For the first question,” Shelton began to reply. “The boys go for their daily poop droppings every 10 to 30 minutes. And for the second question, they are potty-trained. So whenever they know that they’re gonna drop their bombs, they go to any of the little bird towers in the mansion, and they do their business as usual. They also tend to use the toilet too.”
Brandy chuckled once more. “That’s kind of ironic.” She said, “Anyway, what is your best-for-last spot of this mansion that you want to show me next?”
“Follow me, M’lady.” Shelton said in a gentlemanly fashion, offering his hand to Brandy.
After Brandy gave Shelton’s hand gentle squeeze, they made their way back up the stairs, the macaws still holding on as they made every step of the way.
“And I also forgot to mention to you that I also have a workplace room on the third floor.” Shelton spoke up. “I have two computers set up. One for working, and one for gaming.”
“And what specific part of the third floor is that room located?” Brandy asked.
“You’ll see.” Shelton replied, raising a finger as he said that.
After heading up to the third floor again, Shelton made his way to his own bedroom as Brandy followed him. Shelton, still mindful of his macaws on his arm, opened the door to his room. Immediately afterwards, the macaws began to flutter over to the overhead structure that perched over his bed. As Brandy stepped into the room, she gasped with shock as her eyes scanned all over the room.
“Shelton.” She said, her hand still covering her mouth in shock. “This is your room?”
“Well, it’s not a stylish-type room, but it’s spacious.” Shelton replied. “Not trying to have every room in the house overstyled with all this stuff.”
Shelton began to point out everything that the bedroom offered. “So this,” He began to explain. “Is my bed. It’s pretty much the best bed I have because everything on this bed is extremely soft. From the pillows, to the sheets, the comforter, the pillow cases, and the mattress. This one above my bed is a perching area for when the

macaws come to sleep if they don’t want to sleep in their bird house. It’s also big enough so that it can catch their bombs. This is the door to the closet, where I keep my clothes here. And speaking of clothes, we’re still wearing our night-out clothes.”
“Oh. Yeah.” Brandy said, realizing that she still had her nightgown on her. “We’ll take those off soon.”
“Anyway,” Shelton said, continuing his explanation. “This is my own bathroom. Just like my bedroom, it’s very spacious and it has a big shower and a double sink. And finally, this room right here, this is my workplace room. This is where I work and play games on the PC. It’s also very spacious too.” He then puts his hands on his hips as he closes the door to the workplace room. “Well, M’lady, that concludes the tour of my mansion. What’s your opinion on it so far?”
“I.. love it.” Brandy said, “I have never been in something like this before. It is just beautiful.” She took a seat on the bed, her hand roaming over it and feeling the said softness of the comforter itself. “And this is the best comforter texture I’ve ever felt.” Brandy continued.
Shelton sat down next to Brandy. “Do you want anything to eat or drink?” He asked. “I can get you a glass of water.”
“No thank you.” Brandy replied. “I’m all stuffed up for today after that dinner date at The Chopped Leaf.”
“So am I, baby.” Shelton said back.
He then checked the time on his watch. It was already 9 in the afternoon. The tour went on for quite a while ever since his date with Brandy and the stopover to her house.
“Wow. It’s getting late.” Shelton said, “Let’s get ready for bed, babe. How tired are you after that tour?”
“Well, since you said that.” Brandy replied, yawning. “I feel like having a good night’s rest after walking around this huge place of yours.”
With that, Brandy and Shelton took off their suit and tie and nightgown respectively, Brandy got rid of her makeup and daisy, and finally, the both of them got into the bed, the soft and comforting texture of the sheets and pillows making them sigh with contentment and relaxation. The both of them lay on their backs.

Brandy looked over and turned her head to look at Shelton. Then, she turned her body to the side to face him.
“You know, Shelton.” She began, getting Shelton’s attention as he looked over and turned his head. “After all that has happened today, yesterday, the day of the surgery, and the day we first met, I feel like I’m starting to see a connection between the two of us.”
“Same here, Brandy.” Shelton replied. “I not only saw you as a woman who was desperate to achieve the things that they wanted, but I saw you as something else. I saw you as a beautiful woman with a pretty face and a gorgeous and loving smile. There was something about you that made me feel so awestruck when I first met you.”
“I know.” Brandy giggled. “And you’re still a very handsome individual. It gives me great gratitude to say that after what we have done for the past 3 days up until your wonderful tour that you have given me of this mansion, you are now officially considered to be my boyfriend.”
“And it gives me great gratitude to officially grant you as my girlfriend.” Shelton said back.
Brandy giggled once more, her cheeks flushing with red as she smiled with happiness. Shelton then turned over to his side to turn off the light. “Goodnight, babe.” He said as he turned off the light.
“Sweet dreams, my saviour.” Brandy replied back as she turned over to turn off the light on her side.
The rest of the night went on normally. Shelton and Brandy’s soft breathing filled the room as they went to sleep. Ever since the events of when they went to The Chopped Leaf together, what would these two loving soulmates plan next? Would they go to a park? Would they visit the sandy shoreline? Would they eat at another restaurant? Who knows? But what’s important is that these two lovebirds are on a journey, a journey to the brightest future of all.
The next morning began to set in, the sun rising from the horizon. As the sunlight beamed into the bedroom of Shelton’s apartment, Shelton opened his eyelids slightly. He had had a long sleep after showing his girlfriend his entire mansion. Speaking of Brandy, she

was still sleeping too, her back laying on the soft sheets with her head still resting on the plushy pillows. Shelton had a cute idea in his head. He was going to wake Brandy up by giving her a kiss on her lips. He quietly leaned over to face his girlfriend.
“Oh, sleeping beauty.” Shelton said quietly in a sing-song tone. “I got a special surprise to wake you up.”
He slowly moved closer to his girlfriend, his lips puckered as he inched closer. As he got to Brandy’s face, his lips made contact with hers. Brandy, feeling the touch of Shelton’s lips pressed against hers, made her open her eyes slowly, only to see Shelton giving her a good morning kiss. She didn’t make a wide-eyed expression as that happened, instead, she returned the kiss to her boyfriend, as if she was aware that Shelton would give her something like this. After their short kiss, Brandy gave off a pleasing and appreciative smile.
“Good morning, handsome.” Brandy said soothingly. “That was a very generous way of waking me up. I appreciate it.”
“I thought your reaction would be more surprising.” Shelton said, chuckling a bit.
“No, no, it’s okay.” Brandy replied warmly, sitting up from the bed and stretching her arms. “I love to share a kiss with you every now and then.”
Shelton shrugged his shoulders. “Well, at least you’re up now.” He said.
He gets up from his bed and checks on his macaws, who were beginning to awaken from their sleep as well. Shelton reached out his arms for them to flutter down to him, in which they did. Shelton then went over to the door, and turned to face Brandy.
“Would you like me to make you some breakfast, love?” He asked.
“I would love to have whatever you’re making.” Brandy replied.
“Okay.” Shelton replied back. “How about I make you some poached eggs?”
“Mmm.” Brandy said, soothingly. “I love poachers.”
“Do you want them to be made in the proper fashion?” Shelton asked again.
“Yes, please.” Brandy replied once more, her tail beginning to wag.

“Okay.” Shelton said cheerfully as he and Brandy began to make their way into the kitchen. “Two poached eggs coming right up.” The macaws squawked as they walked down the spiraling staircase. “Oh. Do you boys want your morning snack?” Shelton asked again.
The macaws squawked once more, bobbing their heads up and down excitedly. “Okay. That makes it five mouths. Six mouths to feed since I’m here as well.”
Brandy giggled, overhearing what Shelton said. As soon as they made their way into the kitchen, Shelton went out into the backyard first because he wanted to get to the bird house to feed his macaws since the bird feed was in there. Brandy waited on one of the dining room chairs, crossing her legs and putting her hands together, whistling and waiting for her boyfriend’s return. Meanwhile, Shelton was busy giving his macaws the food.
“There you go, boys.” He said, “Now you guys get to stay in here because me and my babe have to go somewhere fun.”
The macaws squawked understandably as Shelton exited the bird house and went back inside to his mansion. The sound of Shelton opening the door caught Brandy’s attention.
“Hey, Shelton.” Brandy said joyfully. “Now are you ready to get the poachers made?”
“Of course, babe.” Shelton replied, walking over to the fridge to get the eggs and white vinegar. “I was just getting my birds fed first.”
“How come you left them in the bird house?” Brandy asked, raising a brow.
“Because..” Shelton said, putting the pot onto the stove and pouring the water in it. “I have something special planned for the two of us. I’ll explain later after breakfast.”
“Oh, okay.” Brandy said, “I would love to hear what you have in store for today after breakfast.”
Shelton turned on the stove, the flames flickering to life as the stove began to boil the water. As Shelton poured the vinegar and grabbed out a spoon from one of the drawers, Brandy took a moment to admire her surroundings of the mansion ever since yesterday’s tour. This mansion, this beautiful, spacious, expensive, luxurious, and well-constructed mansion was her new home, her new life, and all of

it felt perfect. Brandy couldn’t help but feel grateful for her boyfriend, for his support, for his kindness, and for the love they shared.
After Brandy’s little look-around moment, she took a moment to sit back down on the chair while Shelton started stirring the water carefully while the egg was in there. His stirring was slow and precise. After a few moments, he drained out the water and let the poached eggs sit so they could cool off while he went to get some toast ready.
As everything was ready, Shelton served the toast and eggs on two plates. He then brought the food over to where Brandy was sitting. Shelton sat in his own chair next to his girlfriend as he began to chow down, his quiet chewing filling the atmosphere. Brandy smelt the waft of the freshly cooked eggs and toast.
“Wow, Shelton.” She said, “These poached eggs are perfect.” She took a moment to take a bite out of the egg. She sighed with contentment as she swallowed the food. “And it’s so good.”
Shelton, still chewing on his food, gave Brandy a thumbs up, telling her that he’s glad that she likes the food.
After they finished eating their meal, Shelton gathered up the plates and silverware and opened the dishwasher. As he was putting the dishes in the dishwasher, Shelton began to speak up about his idea for him and his girlfriend’s next outing.
“Now..” He began, closing up the dishwasher after he put the dishes in there. “I think it’s time I tell you my plan for our next outing.”
“Yes?” Brandy asked while raising a brow.
“So since it’s really warm outside, I figured that we should head out into the open sunshine breeze and relax by the shoreline.” Shelton explained.
“You mean we’re going to the beach?” Brandy asked again.
“Correct, love.” Shelton replied.
“Oh, my.” Brandy giggled. “I would like to catch some summer breeze with you. I’ll get my things.”
“I’ll get mine too.” Shelton continued. “And I’ll get some sunscreen for the both of us. And it’s SPF 100, by the way.”

The both of them went back upstairs to Shelton’s room, grabbed their respective bag and backpack, and headed out the front door, and towards the SUV. As soon as they got into the car, Shelton turned on the ignition, backed his car up to the gate, opened the gate, and drove his car out of the mansion and towards the shore while the doors automatically closed and locked themselves.
The drive to the beach was long, but they made it. Shelton grabbed his backpack from the back seat, stared out into the open, and breathed in the fresh, warm air. He exhaled softly.
“I love the smell of summer breeze in the morning.” Shelton said cheerfully.
“What are we waiting for, handsome? Come on.” Brandy called out, already walking to where the other pedestrians were at.
“Okay, okay, I’m coming.” Shelton said, following his girlfriend.
As they walked onto the sand, it was already burning their feet. Together, they quickly hopped to the mats that sat next to the changing area.
“Wow, is the sand hot?” Shelton said, “Well, we got to the changing areas, at least. Do you want to go first, or should I go first?”
“I’ll go first.” Brandy replied. “You’ll love what I like to wear when I catch some summer breeze.” After saying that, she booped Shelton’s nose.
Brandy opened the door to the changing area, and closed the door behind her. Shelton leaned against the wall of the changing area, waiting for his girlfriend to finish changing. After a short while, the door opened, and out stepped Brandy.
“Oh, Shelton.” Brandy called out to him in a sing-song tone. “Check me out, baby.”
Shelton turned around, and what he saw made his eyes widen, but he didn’t drop his jaw, instead he let out a wolf whistle as he examined Brandy.
Brandy was wearing a beautiful and sparkling yellow one-piece swimsuit, she was even wearing her pretty sparkling pink beach hat with fake blue flowers littering the edges of the hat, and a purple center circle. Brandy did a slow turnaround to give Shelton a better

look at her swimwear. She pretty much looked like a goddess, but almost.
“So?” Brandy asked. “How do I look?”
“Brandy, I think you look splendid.” Shelton replied with a smirk.
“Thank you.” Brandy said, giving Shelton a kiss on his cheek. “I was going to get my sunglasses and thongs, but I decided to go without them.” She stepped aside, letting Shelton go next. “After you.” She continued, gesturing to the door.
“Thank you.” Shelton said, opening the door and closing it behind him as he began to change.
Like with Brandy, it took a short while until Shelton opened the door and came out of the changing area.
He was dressed in a fancy red pair of swim trunks as well as a dark grey cap on his head. He also did a slow turnaround as he presented himself to Brandy.
“So?” Shelton asked. “Am I dashing?”
Brandy smiled. “Yes.” She replied. “But don’t you also have a pair of glasses like me?”
“I do.” Shelton replied also. “But I didn’t bring those along with me as well as my crocs. But it doesn’t matter. Anyway, are you ready for some fun?”
“Yes.” Brandy replied once more, walking to some place where they can set up the umbrella and beach towels and foldable reclining chairs.
Shelton followed after, eager to start the day at the beach as much as Brandy. It took a little while, but the two of them finally found a spot that was close to the water, and stuck the umbrella in the ground and unraveled the beach towels. They also set up the foldable recliner chairs.
The scenery was splendid. Everything was warm with the sounds of the seagulls flying overhead and squawking along with the more relaxing sounds of the waves crashing against the shore.
Throughout the day together at the beach, Shelton and Brandy spent hours swimming in and out of the inviting water, sunbathing, exploring the beach together, playing volleyball, building sand

castles, sharing a picnic, and talking about life in the ocean both beautiful and terrifying.
As the sun began to set, Brandy was folding up the beach towels, umbrella, and foldable reclining chairs while Shelton stared out into the horizon as the water sloshed against his feet. He breathed in the warm air and exhaled with joy.
Brandy turned back to look at Shelton. “Hey, handsome. Are you gonna help me tidy up here?” She asked.
Shelton, breaking free from his trance, cleared his throat. “Yeah. I am. I was just..” He said before pausing.
“Just what?” Brandy asked again.
“I.. I..” Shelton said again, stuttering like a broken record.
“Okay, now I’m curious.” Brandy said, chuckling a bit and walking over to him. “Is there something you want to tell me?”
“No.” Shelton answered. “I was just staring at the horizon. I wasn’t gonna confess my feelings to you since we already did that.”
“I know.” Brandy said, giggling.
“And you already know that I love you and you love me,” Shelton continued. “But we’re over that now.”
“I understand.” Brandy said again. “So what were you really doing besides just standing where the water is touching your feet?”

Shelton chuckled. “Well, I was just looking out for any signs of those box jellyfish.” He said.
“Oh.” Brandy said, already getting what Shelton was talking about. “Yeah. I’ve known about those pests. They can kill a person at any moment after they touch them.”
“I’ll say.” Shelton replied. “I’m so glad that we’re lucky enough to find a beach that doesn’t have those jellyfish wandering about.”
“Yeah.” Brandy replied also. Then, she got an idea. “Shelton? Since you gave me a kiss this morning to wake me up, how about I return the favour by giving you a kiss as a way to end the day instead of starting it?” She asked, her fingers tracing all over Shelton’s body.
Shelton, grinning with joy, held Brandy’s hands and stared lovingly into her eyes. “Brandy. I would love that.” He said.

With that, Brandy kissed Shelton on the lips once more, falling down into the water. This session lasted for a bit with the waves sloshing and flowing over the kissing couple as they held onto each other. After their session ended, they hugged each other before continuing to collect all of their things and head back to the car. After they got back to the car, they put all of their things back inside, got into the car, and drove back home. After the drive back home, Shelton and Brandy went inside the mansion, still dressed in their swimwear. The both of them went upstairs to the bathroom and took off their swimwear.

Brandy was just about to go into the shower to get all of the sea salt and sand off of her, but then she turned to Shelton. “Oh, baby.” Brandy called out to him. “Wanna take a shower with me?”

Shelton chuckled. “I accept the invitation.” He said, getting into the shower while Brandy closed the shower door. The two of them had another wholesome moment together, washing all of the sea salt and sand off with their respective shampoos and conditioner and bodywash. After their shower, Shelton stepped out as he dried himself off. Brandy watched him after she stepped out of the shower as well. She took another moment to take in the sight of her new friend. Her lover, her soulmate, dedicated to making her life more happy and full of love.

“You’re the best, sweetie.” Brandy said, wrapping her arms around his waist and forming a heart shape with her hands.

Shelton grinned happily, leaning back into the embrace as he combed his fur.

After the couple were cleaned and dried, Shelton began making dinner, which was a chicken stew. They took a moment to sit down and enjoy their chicken stew. After dinner, they cleaned up the kitchen, then they went back into the bathroom to clean themselves up once more, this time, getting ready for bed. As they tucked themselves in as well as Shelton’s macaws, who were given their snack after Shelton and Brandy came back home, they said their goodnights, and turned off the lamps on the nightstands on each side.

It had been another exciting day for the couple. As they slept through the night, they dreamed about what their respective parents would think of each other. Shelton is wondering how his parents and siblings would think of Brandy. Brandy was not only thinking about what her dad would say about Shelton, but she was thinking about what her sister Chilli would say about him. Will she like him? Will her brother-in-law like him? Would her nieces like him? She kept those thoughts in the back of her head as she slept through the night, hoping to find out if they would like her new boyfriend, more importantly, her sister Chilli.

The next morning, as usual, arose beyond the horizon. Shelton and Brandy were sleeping together just like last time. When Shelton woke up as the sun was peaking through the windows, he didn't kiss his girlfriend Brandy on the lips this time, instead, he gently shook her shoulder to wake her up.

"Babe." Shelton said. "Wake up."

Brandy began to open her eyes and yawn, she then looked up to see her boyfriend.

"Good morning, handsome." Brandy greeted. "How was your sleep?"

"I had a pretty good sleep after you and I had fun at the beach yesterday." Shelton said, getting out of bed and stretching his arms. "How did you sleep?"

"I slept well too." Brandy replied. She then got out of bed and yawned again. "You know, Shelton, I've been thinking.."

Shelton raised a brow, curious to know what his girlfriend was going to say. "What are you thinking, exactly?" He asked.

"Well.." Brandy began. "I was thinking about visiting my sister Chilli again ever since I mentioned her to you on the day we met. And I was hoping that I would get the chance to introduce you to her."

"Ok." Shelton said, nodding his head understandably. "Go on."

"And I was also planning to do that not just because I want to show you what my sister is like," Brandy continued, "but it's because I want to spend more time with her since I never got to visit her a bunch, ever since the day I gave her daughters onesies."

"Your sister has daughters?" Shelton asked.

“Yeah.” Brandy replied cheerfully. “They are the sweetest little darlings ever. I’m sure you’ll like my nieces and brother-in-law in much the same way as my sister.”
“Ok.” Shelton said again. “If that’s what you want to do, then I’m up for it. What time do you want to go there?”
“I’m thinking after breakfast. Maybe at around 10 o’clock in the morning?” Brandy suggested.
“Alright.” Shelton said once again, agreeing with his girlfriend's decision. “10 o’clock it is. I’ll make sure the boys have their morning feed as well as us, then we can head out.”
“That’s what I like to hear, baby.” Brandy said.
The first part of the morning went by as usual. Shelton made some breakfast for himself and his lovely girlfriend, then he went over to the bird house to feed his macaws, then he and his girlfriend cleaned up the kitchen, then they hung out for a bit before 10 o’clock. Once it was time to head out, Shelton and Brandy gathered their respective bags and headed out the door. Shelton locked the front door, then headed to his car, which was parked on the driveway. Brandy on the other hand, she was just staring off into the distance. Shelton got in the car, then noticed Brandy standing idle and opened the window to speak.
“Hey, babe.” He called out to her. “Are you coming?”
Brandy snapped out of her trance and went to the car. “Sorry. I was just thinking about how long I wanted to stay with my sister for.” She said, opening the door and buckling her seat belt.
“Oh.” Shelton said. “Do you want to stay with them for a week? I don’t mind, and your sister won’t mind. At least it will give you an excuse to stay with them for longer than just once.”
Brandy was quiet for a bit before answering. “You know what? I like it.” She said, grinning up to her cheekbones. “And I think my sister will be happy to have me for a week.”
Shelton also grinned up to his cheekbones. “That’s my girl.” He said in a comforting way.
Then, Shelton turned on the ignition, the engine started, and they were off to find the Heelers’ home. Shelton didn’t know where they were, so Brandy gave him the directions. Even though Brandy

hadn’t been to their place in a long time, she still knew the directions. It took a little bit, but they finally made it to the Heelers’ home in no time. When Brandy noticed that the drive to the Heelers’ house was shorter than expected, she was a bit baffled.
“Wait a minute.” Brandy said. “Is your mansion actually right around the corner from their place?”
“Surprisingly so.” Shelton said, getting a good look at the Heelers’ wonderful house. “So this is the place, eh?”
“Yep.” Brandy replied. She then asked again. “Oh. And what about your macaws? They might starve if you’re not at your mansion.”
“No worries, babe.” Shelton replied. “I got it under control.”
He pulled out his phone and dialed a number. He had a little chat with someone on his phone. It took a little bit before he finished the call and put his phone away.
“Anyway.” Shelton said. “How do you want to present me to your sister?”
Brandy thought for a moment, then, an idea sparked inside her head. “I have an idea.” She said with a smirk.
As they got out of the car, Brandy explained her plan. “So you go and hide by the stairs without being seen while I go and knock on the door. And once I say your name, that’s when you come in.”
“Got it.” Shelton accepted. “Do your magic, babe.”
Brandy nodded her head and drew her attention to the front door of the Heelers’ home. She smiled, then she closed her eyes and took a deep breath.
“It’s all good. Brandy.” She said to herself, her voice filled with hope of seeing her sister again as she walked up the stairs and to the front door.
Inside the home of the Heelers, Chilli, her husband Bandit, and their daughters Bluey and Bingo were playing a game together. They were playing a game of neighbours. Each of them had cushions and pillows stacked on top of one another to mimic houses, and there were toys scattered all over the room they were playing in.
While Chilli was pretending to be vacuuming her pretend house, she heard a knock on the front door.

“Oh. Sounds like the front door.” Chilli said. She then turned to Bandit. “Honey, hold the playtime for a bit, I have to get the door.” She continued.
“No worries, babe.” Bandit replied. “I’ll wait.”
Chilli then exited the play room and over to the front door. She looked through the peep hole first before opening it, revealing her older sister Brandy.
“Hello again, little sis.” Brandy said cheerfully. “Sorry if my presence was a bit sudden, but I just thought I’d come over for a visit again after a week and 3 days.”
Chilli had her mouth agape in shock when seeing her sister again after a week and 3 days. She then shook her head and began to speak.
“Hi, Brandy.” Chilli said cheerfully before she and her sister embraced each other. “Of course you can come in. I suspect that you wanted to visit me more often?”
“Yes.” Brandy replied, breaking up her hug with Chilli. “Because, you know, we never saw each other much.” She then raised a finger. “But I am not alone this time.” She continued.
“What do you mean?” Chilli asked.
“Well,” Brandy continued. “I met someone very special, someone that is as charming as your husband, someone that I think you will definitely like to meet.” She then looks back at her boyfriend, who slowly begins making his way to the porch. “Chilli Heeler, I want you to meet my handsome brand new boyfriend, Shelton Sheltie.”
As his name was spoken, Shelton walked up the porch stairs and stopped on the welcome mat. He grinned happily as he met Brandy’s sister for the first time.
“G’day, miss.” Shelton said, waving his hand at Chilli in delight.
Chilli threw her hands over her mouth and gasped in shock. She wasn’t expecting her sister to somehow find a man of her own. Seeing her sister’s boyfriend for the first time made her expression change from shocked, to an adoring smile.
“Brandy.” Chilli said quietly, sounding like she was about to burst out crying from joy. “I can’t believe that you came this far. He’s amazing. I wasn’t expecting you to find a man of your own.”

Brandy chuckled. “It’s okay, sis. Relax.” She said, patting her sister on the shoulder.
“I know.. I.. I’m sorry.. I..” Chilli stuttered. “I just think that.. That it’s lovely for you to meet someone as handsome as.. Him.”
“And you must be Chilli.” Shelton joined in. “Brandy here has told me about you.”
“Of course she has.” Chilli said, chuckling. “As you can see, um.. Shelton, is that I am a mother to my two daughters, and I am married to my husband.”
“Aww,” Shelton cooed. “Congratulations, Chilli.”
Chilli giggled. “Thank you. Anyway my husband and kids are in the play room playing a game right now. Follow me.” She said cheerfully.
Shelton nodded his head, following Chilli to the next room while his girlfriend Brandy followed after. Bandit, Bluey, and Bingo were waiting for Chilli to come back. It took a short moment before Chilli came back with not just Brandy, but Shelton too.
“Welcome back, Chilli.” Bandit greeted. He looked over and saw his sister-in-law Brandy and Shelton. Seeing the latter made his eyebrow raise. “I see that Brandy is back, but who is the new guy?”
“G’day, sir.” Shelton greeted. “My name is Shelton Sheltie. What’s yours?”
“Bandit Heeler, mate.” Bandit replied.
Bluey and Bingo were rearranging the toys before Bluey caught sight of her Aunt.
“Bingo! Aunty Brandy’s back!” She exclaimed as her tail began to wag back and forth.
Bingo gasped in surprise. “Really?” She exclaimed.
“Yay!” They both said in unison as they ran up and hugged their Aunt.
“Hey, girls.” Brandy said, returning the hug. “Still enjoying your onesies?”
“Yes, Aunty Brandy.” Bluey and Bingo said. They suddenly notice Shelton. “And who’s that?” They asked again.
“Hello, little ones.” Shelton greeted as he crouched down to their level. “Aww, you girls are such sweet and adorable little angels.”

Bluey and Bingo giggled. “What’s your name, good sir?” Bingo asked.
“My name is Shelton.” Shelton said again. “And you are?”
“I’m Bluey.” Bluey said. “And this is my sister Bingo.” Bingo waved at Shelton.
“It’s a pleasure to meet you girls.” Shelton said once more. “What are you all up to?”
“Me, Bingo, mum, and dad are playing a game.” Bluey replied. “And it involves role-playing as neighbours.”
“Ooh.” Shelton said again.
“But we play other games too.” Bluey continued. “And they always end with a good note while some end on a mishap.”
Shelton chuckled. “Well, mishap or not, they are still fun to you.” He said, gently nudging Bluey’s shoulder.
Bluey giggled as he did that.
“So why did Brandy come back after a whole week and 3 days after she came over to give Bluey and Bingo onesies?” Bandit asked.
“Becasue she wants to spend more time with me.” Chilli replied. “It’s better for the both of us.”
“But Brandy now has a special someone, babe.” Bandit continued. “It doesn’t really matter if she decides to hang out with either you or her new boyfriend.”
Chilli was silent for a bit before her expression changed into an adoring smile. “You’re right, honey.” She said, placing a hand on her husband’s shoulder. “It doesn't really matter what my sister chooses. All that matters is that she gets to spend time with us at any time.”
Bandit and Chilli then came in for a quick kiss on the lips before Bandit spoke up to get the couples’ attention.
“Hey, you two.” He called out. “How long will you be staying for?”
“Brandy said that she and I wanted to stay with you for a week.” Shelton replied. “And not to worry, we brought all the things that we needed to spend the week here. Are you cool with that?”
The family, who were listening to Shelton’s plans of staying over for a week, all looked at each other with expressions of thinking on their

faces. Bandit and Chilli then looked at the couple and nodded their heads.
“Yes you can.” Chilli said in a calm and warm manner. “I gladly appreciate you guys staying over for that long. Mostly for my sister since she and I hardly got to see each other a lot.”
Brandy smiled with joy. “Oh, thank you so much, Chilli.” She said happily.
When Bluey and Bingo heard their mother accept the plans of having Shelton and Brandy stay over for a week, they beamed with such joy, that they squealed at the top of their lungs and ran up to their Aunt and hugged her. They felt so happy to have their Aunt stay with them for a whole week.
After they broke up the embrace, Chilli then walked up to Brandy and Shelton.
“I have some sleeping bags for the both of you.” She explained. “And I can give you two pillows for each of you as well. And we also have a spare bedroom that’s next to Bluey and Bingo’s bedroom. So that will be your place to stay for when you come and sleep over.”
Brandy raises a brow. “Where do you keep the extra pillows and sleeping bags?” She asked.
“I’ll show you.” Chilli said as she led Shelton and Brandy into the next room.
Chilli led them to the closet where they kept all the extra pillows and sleeping bags. She opened the closet, and of course, it was filled with pillows. Shelton and Brandy each grabbed one sleeping bag and two pillows.
“Thank you.” Shelton and Brandy said in unison.
“No problem.” Chilli replied. “And the spare bedroom is right this way.”
Chilli led the way again as Shelton and Brandy followed her again. They made their way upstairs to where Bluey and Bingo’s room is at. And next to it, was the spare room itself.
“Here’s your room, you two.” Chilli said, gesturing to them to enter the room.
As Shelton and Brandy entered the room, they examined the entirety of it before Brandy looked back at her sister.

“You know, sis.” She began. “This is a promising room. It’s not as spacious as my boyfriend’s mansion, but it still looks comfortable for the two of us.”
“Thank you.” Chilli replied. “You know, now that you mentioned a mansion, I’m now starting to wonder what Shelton’s mansion is like.”
Shelton chuckled. “Well, Chilli, I think maybe next time when you and your family get the chance to come over to my place.”
Chilli smiled as Shelton spoke out. “And also, I should tell you the story of this room.” She said as she began the story while the couple began laying down the pillows and sleeping bags. “When my daughters saw that we were moving that baby crib out of that room, they had the idea to move Bluey’s bed into this room as well as all her other belongings. And me and Bandit kept hearing them walking about and I seem to be the only one that confronts the whole situation. Then Bluey asked for one more thing and do you know what that was?”
“What was it?” Shelton asked.
“It was her own sister Bingo.” Chilli replied. “And it was just the sweetest thing since those two cared for each other. I mean, yes, they once broke a gnome at the Hammerbarn store and I yelled at Bluey for it, but I was also sure that someone would come by to either throw it out or glue the pieces back together with expertise.”
Shelton widened his eyes for a bit, then he spoke up again. “Um.. about that broken gnome.. I was the one who fixed it.” He said, coming clean about that broken gnome that Bluey and Bingo broke.
“Wait, wait, wait.” Chilli said in bafflement. “You fixed that gnome?”
“Yes.” Shelton replied. “And I also have a job as an employee at Hammerbarn too.”
“Wow.” Chilli said in amazement. “I never knew about this until now.” She laughs happily after hearing about Shelton’s job as an employee at Hammerbarn. “I have got to tell my family this. Right up until dinnertime. So you two can go ahead and continue getting yourselves settled.” She continued.
Shelton and Brandy nodded their heads as they finished up getting settled in the spare bedroom.

The next half of the day went by as you would expect. Shelton and Brandy hung out with the kids and got to be involved with their crazy games.

When dinnertime came around, Chilli served up some hot dogs with fries as the side dish. While they were eating, Chilli told her husband and daughters about Shelton's job as a Hammerbarn employee and how he fixed that broken gnome. Bandit, Bluey, and Bingo were just as astonished as Chilli was after hearing that amazing story.

After dinner, Shelton and Brandy helped Chilli tidy up the kitchen while Bandit played with his daughters. And after all of that was complete, everyone began to get tucked in for the coming night that was ahead.

Chilli didn't go to her bedroom where her husband was. She just leaned her body on the doorway, watching her sister and her sister's boyfriend get tucked in. After they got tucked in, they both looked over at Chilli.

"Comfortable?" Chilli asked.

"Yes, we're comfortable." Brandy replied.

"Exactly." Shelton joined in. He paused for a little moment before asking Chilli. "Hey.. uh.. Remember when you told us about how this spare room used to be for when your daughters were babies?"

"Yeah?" Chilli asked curiously.

"Well, I want to ask you this.." Shelton continued. "What was it like having a baby for the first time?"

Chilli's expression changed from happy to worried. She remembered her past when she had a miscarriage that ruined her and her husband's chance of having their first child. But because she knew that Shelton would understand, she took a deep breath and began her story.

"Well," She started. "It was rather a depressing backstory. You see, me and Bandit were extremely excited to have our first child. But then, the tragedy rained down on me like a waterfall as soon as I heard about what happened. I had a miscarriage that made me fall into a hole of depression after me and Bandit heard about it. We had to let it off of our chest for a really long time. Then we got back into the game and this time, there were no issues. Bluey was born, and

she has now become the one thing that gives me the comeback to having kids. Bingo was the same story. So, yeah. Bluey was pretty much my rainbow child."
"Aww." Shelton cooed. "That last part was really touching. I feel sorry about the other things you said."
"It's okay." Chilli replied. "My miscarriage was.. Rather difficult to process, but in the end, we got over it. I guess it just ended up being a part of life for me." She raised a finger. "But before you ask again, I'm gonna say no because my miscarriage memory was not the reason why Brandy and I had our fight from 4 years ago." She continued.
"Oh, dear." Shelton said again. "I hate arguments."
"Well, arguments can happen from time to time," Chilli continued. "But they always end on a good note after working things out. Anyway, the real reason why me and my sister had a fight was because of her revealing the truth of her having infertility."
"Oh." Shelton said, "Brandy told me that on the day we met."
"I figured you would say that." Chilli chuckled. "Anyway, you two should be going to bed now. It was a relief sharing my backstory to you. And I'm glad that you understood."
"Yeah. I know." Shelton said as he began tucking himself and his girlfriend into the sleeping bags.
Chilli was about to head back to her room, but she stopped to go back and say one last thing.
"Oh." She began again. "There's one more thing that I have to share with you before you go to bed."
"What's that?" Shelton asked.
"Well," Chilli continued. "I want to share something that my mum shared with me. It's something that I shared with my daughters too." She clears her throat as she begins. "Remember, I'm always here for you, even if you can't see me. Because I love you."
Shelton clutched his chest after hearing that quote. "Chilli, that quote was beautiful." He said happily.
Chilli giggled. "Yeah. It was something that my mum shared with me a lot ever since me and Brandy were kids way before she died. Now,

it’s become a family tradition, to let us all know that we’ll all be there for each other even if we die at a certain age.” She explained.
“Well, I’ll make sure to save it for later when my girlfriend starts feeling down about something.” Shelton said once more before tucking himself in.
Chilli smiled at what Shelton said, then she said her goodnights to them, then she went to her own bed and tucked herself in next to her husband.
Throughout the night, everyone was comfortable in their respective beds. Bluey and Bingo in their bedroom, Chilli and Bandit in their own bed, and even Shelton and Brandy in the spare room with their sleeping bags. The weekend-long stay at the Heelers house was just beginning, and while Shelton was fast asleep, he was thinking about what to plan for the coming days just so that nobody would be staying at the house getting involved in Bluey and Bingo’s crazy games. Yes, it would be fun to do that, but Shelton at least wanted to have everyone plan to go out somewhere and get some fresh air.
With his girlfriend by his side, the coming days for Shelton will hopefully be a blast. And he hopes that whatever plans might come into his head, he will know for sure that the Heelers will definitely enjoy it.
Shelton and Brandy’s weekend-long marathon at the Heeler’s house was fantastic. During those days, Shelton had planned to have a karaoke night, go to a waterpark, hike up the creek, have a movie night, and, of course, be involved in one of the kids’ crazy games.
AS the final day at the Heeler’s house for Shelton and Brandy came, they had breakfast like normal, gathered up their respective belongings, and waited until lunch time. It was Shelton and Brandy’s idea to leave at that time.
So when the time came, they headed out the door and back to the SUV. The Heelers watched as Shelton and Brandy got in the car and buckled their seat belts. But before they left, Chilli came up to the car to have one more conversation with them. Shelton also rolled down the window as Chilli stood next to the car.
“We’re so happy to have you two here.” Chilli said. “It’s been a fun ride.”

“Thank you very much.” Shelton replied. “I’m happy to see that the four of you had such a wonderful weekend.”
“I am, Shelton.” Chilli said again. “And I was more happy to have my sister over as well. Because like we said, we never saw each other much. So it was great to have her stay with us for one week.”
Brandy leaned over to talk to Chilli. “I’m happy too, sis. Thank you for having me stay for a week.” She said, joining into the conversation.
“No problem.” Chilli replied cheerfully. “But before you two go, there’s one last thing that I must share with you.”
“What’s that?” Shelton asked.
Chilli wrote down something on a piece of notepad paper and handed it to Shelton. This was actually the address to where her and Brandy’s dad lives.
“W- Why are you giving me this address?” Shelton asked again.
“Because this is a special someone that you would definitely love.” Chilli replied. “And it’s none other than me and my sister’s dad.”
“Really?” Shelton asked once more, intrigued by what Chilli mentioned.
“Yes.” Chilli replied again. “However, he's been the only parent of us remaining ever since our mum died. And me and Brandy are worried for him. Yet, he’s learning to look after himself without a wife.” She takes a deep breath and sighs before continuing. “Me and Brandy are his daughters. And he already knows that.. Because we still need him.” She finished.
Shelton’s expression was of worry, but he understood every bit. Then, he spreads a small smile on his face. “Chilli.” He began. “I understand how it feels. I have parents of my own too. And thankfully, none of them have gone into the afterlife. They’re still alive and well.”
“And the thing about parents,” Brandy joined in. “Is that we always have them looking out for us, which is the obvious part. But if our parents die, then we all have to face the world without them. And once you get as old as your parents, your kids will start doing the same.”

“I get what you mean.” Chilli said. “A future like that is heartwrenching, but for the most part, your kids will start doing the same thing we did as kids long ago.” She smiles adoringly as she lets the words from Shelton and Brandy sink into her head.
“Anyway, I gladly appreciated your words. And I hope you two have a good time. Take care. And no matter what happens, take care of my sister for me, Shelton.” She finished.
“Don’t you worry. I know what to do. Take care, Chilli.” Shelton said, waving the family goodbye as he drove away from the home and onto the open road.
While Shelton and Brandy were on their way to the place that is written down on the address in which they typed into the Sat Nav, Shelton called up one of his neighbours to let them know that he might be coming home late. As the friend of his understood his plans, Brandy looked at the notepad paper with the address that would lead them to where her and her sister’s dad is at. She felt excited to reunite with her dad again and she hopes that her dad would like Shelton just like her sister and her family.
After Shelton hung up the call, he drew his attention back onto the road. He had his phone in the cup holder of the car so that whenever someone called him, he’d answer, then he put his phone in there because using a phone while driving is illegal and it can cause trouble.
After a little while, Shelton and Brandy finally made it to the address. “So this is the place?” Shelton asked. “Is it right through..”
“Yep.” Brandy replied. “Right through the forest. I remember every part of this forest just like Chilli.”
“Really?” Shelton asked again as he and his girlfriend got out of the car.
“Yes, Shelton.” Brandy replied again. “There’s so much to see in here. Come on, baby, I’ll show you.” She held out her hand as she finished her sentence.
Shelton was silent for a bit before he smiled. “Okay.” He said as he gently squeezed Brandy’s hand.
Together, Brandy and Shelton made their way into the forest. They walked past the many trees that surrounded this area. They

carefully made their way through the woods until they eventually found the house where Brandy and Chilli's dad lived.
"Wow." Shelton said in amazement. "This looks promising."
"Yep. Welcome to his pad." Brandy said.
Shelton chuckled as he and his girlfriend made their way to the front door. Shelton let Brandy go first since he not only liked showing respect to good-hearted women, but because Brandy wanted to reunite with her dad.
Inside the home, Brandy and Chilli's dad, whose name is Mort, was sipping on some tea. He heard a knock on the door. So he gets up, walks to the door, and opens it, only to be met with not just his daughter Brandy, but Shelton for the first time. He greeted Brandy first.
"Brandy?" Mort asked.
"Hey, dad." Brandy answered cheerfully. "Long time no see." She then hugs her dad.
Mort returns the embrace. "It's good to see you again, my sweet little girl." He said in a warm tone. "So how's everything going for you?"
"Going great as always." Brandy replied. She and Mort broke up the hug. "Dad. I want you to meet my boyfriend, Shelton." She continued as she presented her dad to her boyfriend.
"Hi, mate." Shelton said cheerfully. "I'm Shelton. What's your name?"
"Mort Cattle." Mort replied. "But you can call me Mr. Cattle."
"Pleasure to meet you, Mort." Shelton said again. "At first I thought you would be one of those fathers that would disapprove of their daughter for having a boyfriend."
"Why would you think that, Shelton?" Mort asked. "I'm a super nice guy. If I were a disapproving father, then I would have to sit and listen to a monologue of you standing up to me and for your girlfriend, in which you say that she needs someone like you because without you, she would struggle with the things that she would face in life."
"Yeah, I get it." Shelton said.

“Anyway, yeah, I’m not one of those kinds of dads.” Mort continued. “You see, I have a best friend that I like to hang out with. And having a best friend makes me happy. And his name is Maynard. I can’t really remember the day I met him, but he and I are the best of friends. So you and I, Shelton, are gonna be best mates in a matter of seconds.”
Shelton crossed his arms and gave a smug expression. “Mate, I think we already have.” Shelton said.
Mort and Shelton laughed as they made their way to the living area. Brandy watched from afar as the two made their way into the living room. She was happy that her dad would approve of her having a boyfriend. She then followed them into the living room to hang out with them.
“Would you like anything, Shelton?” Mort asked. “Like a snack, or a drink?”
“I would like a glass of water, please.” Shelton replied. “I could use some refreshments.”
“Coming right up, mate.” Mort said as he walked over to one of the cupboards and grabbed a glass cup.
As Mort was filling up the glass cup with water, Brandy walked over to her boyfriend and sat down next to him. She held his hand and leaned her head onto his.
“So what do you think of my dad?” Brandy asked.
“Babe, your dad is the best.” Shelton replied. “I’m happy that he approves of this.”
Mort then walked over to Shelton with the glass of water in his hands. “Here you go, mate.” He said as he handed the glass of water over to Shelton.
“Thank you.” Shelton said as he took a sip.
Mort then glanced over to see his daughter leaning onto Shelton’s head. He smiles adoringly. “Aww. She really does love you, Shelton.” He said.
“She does, Mort. She’s a bit clingy, though.” Shelton said jokingly.
Brandy giggles, knowing that Shelton was only teasing. Mort chuckles too.
“So how did you and my daughter meet?” Mort asked.

“Eh, it’s a long story.” Brandy replied. “I would try to tell you the whole thing, but I don’t really want to push for details.”
“That’s okay.” Mort said. “Anyway, do you, Shelton, want to meet Maynard?”
“Sure.” Shelton replied. “I’d love to see what he is like.”
“Ok.” Mort said, as he went to the back door. “He’s just over by the lake where the fishing stuff is. So I’ll be right back.”
Mort opens the back door and heads out of the house to go and find Maynard. While he does so, Shelton gets another idea in his head.
“Brandy?” Shelton began. “While your dad is going to find Maynard, how about I call up my parents?”
“You want to introduce me to your parents?” Brandy asked.
“Yes.” Shelton replied. “Because I thought that since you introduced me to your dad, I’ll introduce you to my parents too.”
Brandy smiled as her boyfriend pulled out his phone and called up his parents using FaceTime. It took a little bit for one of them to pick up, but once the call was answered, Shelton had to quickly turn the phone in the right position so that he could let his parents see his face only since he wanted to surprise them.
The first person that showed up after the call was answered was Shelton’s mom Barb.
“Hello, my dearest son.” She said as she waved to him.
“Hi, mum.” Shelton said also. “I just wanted to call you and say that everything is going well and whatnot.”
“Well, that’s good to hear.” Barb said before turning her head away to call out to her husband, sons, and daughters. “Hugh! Kids! Shelton’s FaceTiming us!”
Shelton’s dad Hugh, Shelton’s brothers Louie and Rupert, and Shelton’s sisters Sussie, Petunia, and Lily heard Barb calling out to them about Shelton. So they all walked over to where Barb is and sat down on some chairs to greet Shelton.
“Hey there, kiddo.” Hugh said, waving to his son.
“Hi, dad.” Shelton said before noticing his brothers and sisters. “Hey, brothers and sisters.”
Shelton’s brothers and sisters waved back to him.

“Hey.. um..” Barb spoke up. “I meant to ask you before I called the family over.. Why aren’t you in your mansion?”
“Oh.” Shelton said as he began to present his surprise to them. “The reason why I’m in a different house is because I have someone special to show you.”
“What is it that you want to show us?” Rupert asked.
“Mum? Dad? Brothers? Sisters?” Shelton said in the same way as a game show announcer. “I would like to introduce you all to my girlfriend, Brandy Cattle.” He turned the phone to have it face Brandy.
“Hi.” Brandy said cheerfully as she waved at Shelton’s parents and siblings.
The family gasped in surprise. “And the house that I’m in is her dad’s place.” Shelton continued. “So what do you think of her?”
“Shelton.” Barb began, adored by what she was seeing. “She’s beautiful.”
“She’s a sweetheart.” Hugh joined in.
“She’s a cutie.” Louie and Rupert said in unison.
“She’s top notch.” Sussie, Petunia, and Lily said also in unison.
“Oh, thank you all.” Brandy said, clutching her chest and adored by their compliments. “I appreciate it.”
“What’s she like, Shelton?” Lily asked.
“She is just amazing.” Shelton replied. “There is a backstory to her and the story on how we met, but I’m not gonna push for details, okay?”
“That’s okay with us, mate.” Hugh said.
“So what are you guys doing?” Shelton asked.
“We’re just living our normal lives as a family like usual.” Barb said. “Your brothers and sisters are still rocking it on with their respective jobs.”
“Glad to hear that.” Shelton said before he noticed Mort coming back with Maynard. “Ok. I’ll let you all go now. It’s been a pleasure introducing my girlfriend to you.”
“A real big pleasure.” Petunia said.
“Bye.” The family said in unison before Shelton hung up the call.

After Shelton hung up the call, Mort entered the house with Maynard beside him. Mort peaked around the corner to see Shelton and his daughter Brandy.
“I’m back.” He said. “And I would like you to meet my best friend Maynard.”
Maynard walked into the room and was met with not just Brandy, but he was met with Shelton too.
“Greetings and salutations to you, Shetland Sheepdog.” Maynard said grandly.
“Just call me Shelton.” Shelton insisted. “And you must be Maynard.”
“Yep. That’s me.” Maynard said as he shaked Shelton’s hand. “And I see that you have met the lovely Brandy. How did you two meet?”
“It’s a long story.” Brandy chuckled.
Maynard turns to Mort. “So, mate. Anything that you want to do now that you brought me here?”
“Besides meeting Shelton,” Mort began. “I think the four of us can go and explore our surroundings. We can explore the forest, swim in the lake, go fishing, all of that jazz.”
“You know, dad.” Brandy chimed in, interested in her father’s idea alongside her boyfriend. “I think these ideas are splendid.”
“Yeah.” Shelton agreed. “Which one should we start with? I’m getting excited already.”
Mort and Maynard chuckled. “How about we start with exploring the forest?” Mort began. “I can bring a compass along with me since getting lost in a forest is extremely common.”
“Exactly,” Maynard replied. “So Mort can be in front while me, Shelton, and Brandy can stay close behind.”
“Ok.” Shelton accepted, nodding his head. “That sounds like a good start to having an adventure with Brandy’s dad.”
“What are we waiting for?” Brandy asked. “Let’s go and explore!” She pumps her fist into the air as she says that.
As the three men chuckle, Mort began to collect some gear and after he collected everything that he needed, he went back to meet up with Maynard, Shelton, and Brandy, letting them know that he was ready.

The next half of the day went by as you would expect. The four individuals had a splendid time with each other walking through the forest. Mort explained some survival facts while exploring. Not just that, but he also told Shelton and Brandy the story about when his youngest daughter Chilli brought Bluey and Bingo and they had quite a chase montage. Shelton and Brandy laughed about that story as they continued their way down the forest like a group of wild wolves. They only traveled for about three and a half kilometers before they headed back to the house.

After their little exploration around the forest, their next activity was fishing. Mort and Maynard agreed to fish on the boat while Shelton and Brandy agreed to swim in the water. Yes, Shelton and Brandy didn't bring their own swimwear, but they didn't care.

Their fishing and swimming session lasted for a solid 1 hour before they decided to head back and have dinner. Shelton and Brandy dried themselves off while Mort and Maynard took out the fish that they caught and gutted. They didn't want to collect all of the fish. They wanted to help the fish spread their offspring all across the pond so that the fish population in that lake is at an even and appropriate number.

And because of the fish that Maynard and Mort caught, they decided to have fish and chips for dinner. Shelton and Brandy were not big fans of having seafood, but they didn't mind and Mort understood since everyone in the world has a different taste in food and whatnot.

While enjoying their fish and chips, Shelton decided that it was best to tell Mort and Maynard the story of how he and Brandy met. Shelton explained every detail about how Brandy was desperate to start a family while he himself didn't want loneliness in him. Shelton even told Mort about his idea of giving Brandy an IVF surgery, which worked since it was the only solution for an infertile woman to achieve pregnancy. Mort nodded and understood the details, especially about the bit when Brandy and Chilli had a fight from four years ago, and the bit about when Brandy gave Bluey and Bingo onesies. Mort said that he understands and hopes that Brandy can achieve the things that she wanted.

After dinner, Shelton and Brandy helped clean up the kitchen. Then, it was time to leave. As Brandy and Shelton exited the house, the former got into the car, closed the door, and looked over to see Shelton talking to Mort. She rolled down the window to listen to their conversation.
“Thank you for all of the fun today, mate.” Shelton said. “As well as introducing me to Maynard too.”
“It was nothing, Shelton.” Mort replied. “I had fun too. I loved exploring the forest, fishing, and telling the story about how you helped my daughter achieve the things she wanted so bad.”
Shelton shrugged. “It was the least I could do.” He said. “If I didn’t help her, then she would be stuck with infertility.”
“Yeah, that’s true.” Mort said also. “Heck, if she was stuck with it forever, then the best option for her would be to adopt a child.”
“Yeah. That too.” Shelton said, nodding his head understandably. “Anyway, it was nice meeting you, Mort.”
“It was nice meeting you too, Shelton.” Mort said as he walked up to Shelton and hugged him. “And remember, you are doing a good job protecting and looking after my daughter.”
Shelton hugged back as he let the words from Mort sink into his brain.
“Just be sure to keep her safe from anything, Shelton.” Mort continued. “Always look out for her.”
Shelton and Mort broke up the embrace. “Do not worry.” The former spoke. “I know what to do.”
Shelton left for his SUV, got inside, buckled his seatbelt, started the engine, and looked back at Mort and Maynard.
“Have a good rest of your night, lovebirds!” Maynard called out as he and Mort waved goodbye.
Shelton and Brandy waved goodbye also before they drove off back to the mansion. After Brandy rolled up the car window, she looked over at her boyfriend.
“I heard what dad said to you.” She began. “He really appreciated you looking after me.”
“Yeah.” Shelton replied. “He appreciates everything that I’ve done in order to make you the happiest, bubbliest, girl in the world.”

Brandy giggled. “Thanks.” She then thought of another question to ask. “And about when you introduced your family to me, how come you didn’t keep the call on long enough for my dad to meet your family? He would have loved them the same way as you.”
“I know, babe.” Shelton replied. “But that will have to wait until later. Okay?”
“Ok. That’s totally fine.” Brandy said.
After a long while, they finally made it to the mansion. They went through the gate, then got out of the car.
“Brandy?” Shelton began again. “Remember when you asked me who I was on the phone to?”
“Yes?” Brandy said.
“Well,” Shelton said as he knocked on the front door. “This is who I called up.”
It took a little bit, but the front door opened, and there, standing in front of Shelton, none other than Bluey’s school teacher, Calypso.
“Hey, neighbour.” Calypso greeted. “Your macaws are asleep right now. And they have been given their food like normal.”
“Excellect work, Calypso.” Shelton congratulated. “You can go back to your house now.”
“Thank you.” Calypso said, walking off back to her house before spotting Brandy. “Shelton, who’s this?”
“That is Brandy.” Shelton said, pointing to his girlfriend, who waved happily. “She’s my girlfriend.”
“Aww. That’s cute.” Calypso said. “She’s pretty. Anyway, I’d love to stay and chat with her, but I have to get back to my house. So toodaloo, lovebirds.”
As Calypso hurried back into her house, Shelton stood next to the front door of the mansion and gestured to his girlfriend.
“After you, M’lady.” Shelton said.
“Shelton,” Brandy said as she walked up the porch and into the mansion. “I really love how respectable you are to women like me.”
“I respect all women.” Shelton continued. “Just not the crazy karens.” He then closed the door behind him.
The rest of the night went by normally. Shelton and Brandy had their teeth brushed, they did their business on the toilet, they got to the

bed, and they tucked themselves in. They then said their goodnights, turned off the lamp on the night stands, and closed their eyes to begin their sleep. While they slept through the night, Shelton dreamed about what the other Heeler family members are like. Luckily, he had Chilli's number. So he can call her up to make some arrangements with the other Heeler members. But he won't do that right now. Right now, he has to rest. So what will Shelton really think of the next members of the Heeler family tree? We'll soon find out.

For the next handful of days, Shelton and Brandy have been on an adventure. They got to spend some time with the next set of family members that the Heelers know. Starting with Bandit's brother Stripe and his family, Bandit's other brother Radley and his girlfriend Frisky, and the Heeler brothers' parents Chris and Bob.

Shelton enjoyed the adventure the most because he got to know more about the Heeler family and what they are like.

So now, today is October 30th, 1 day before Halloween. Shelton and Brandy have been together for 2 months and 5 days now. Shelton and Brandy were sleeping in the Halloween-decorated mansion (all of which was set up by the couple themselves). However, the former had his eyes open. On the 20th, Shelton went to a jewelry store to get a special gift for Brandy. It was a beautiful golden ring with a blue diamond in the center. He had also bought a ring box to put the ring in. The reason why he got those is because he was about to set up an engagement surprise for Brandy. So during the next 10 days, he was quietly rehearsing his proposal in the bathroom so that he can remember it and keep it in the back of his head.

And he had to keep the bathroom door locked because he didn't want his girlfriend to find out about it.

Anyway, Shelton had his eyes open because he was thinking about what he was going to do when tomorrow came. So after rubbing his eyes, he went back to sleep, thinking about where he and Brandy should go.

As the next morning set in, the couple woke up like normal, went downstairs to have breakfast like normal, and Shelton fed his macaws like normal. Today was Halloween so Shelton was still

planning in his head on where he and his girlfriend should go on Halloween night. So while Shelton was putting the plates into the dishwasher, an idea came into his head and he began to speak.
“Hey, Brandy?” He asked.
“Yes?” Brandy asked also.
“I found a place that we can go to.” Shelton continued. “It’s far, but close by.”
“Okay?” Brandy asked again, sounding excited. “What’s it called?”
“It’s called Ken Fletcher Park.” Shelton replied. “The drive there might be a bit long, but at least it’s not too far.”
Brandy thought about it for a bit before speaking. “You know, I have been to that park before, but I haven’t been there in a while. And I would love to go there with you.”
Shelton smiled brightly at his girlfriend’s acceptance to join him.
“Excellent.” He said. “And this will be a special day for us. I won’t explain why.”
Brandy was a bit confused, but she shrugged her shoulders. “That’s okay, sweetheart.” She said before asking. “Do you want to go there at dinner time or something?”
“Yeah.” Shelton replied. “That’s actually a good idea because I’ve also been thinking of making some hot dogs, wrapping them up in foil wrapping, and bringing them with us so that we have something to enjoy while we’re at the park.”
Shelton’s plan made Brandy smile more. “I love that.” She replied.
So with the plans set, Shelton and Brandy proceeded to continue the next part of the day like normal. They had lunch, hung out together while either watching TV, playing board games, and overall just being the usual couple that they are. And when dinner time came, Shelton was in the kitchen cooking up the aforementioned hot dogs. He was already in his suit and bowtie and his front hair was combed as expected.
As the hot dogs finished, he served them in the buns on two separate foil pieces. He then put the ketchup on them, wrapped up the hot dogs, then called his girlfriend.
“Brandy. Babe.” He called out. “The hot dogs are ready.”
“Coming.” Brandy called out also.

While Shelton grabbed his keys and made his way to the front door, Brandy came downstairs, wearing her nightgown, daisy, and makeup.
“So how was making those hot dogs?” Brandy asked.
“It went well.” Shelton replied. “Now.. are you ready for the park?”
“Yes.” Brandy replied also.
Once Shelton and Brandy both had their respective bags, they headed out the door and towards Shelton’s car. While they were beginning to head out onto the open road, Brandy was so focused on being prepared for the coming night-out at the park, that she was blissfully unaware that Shelton had the ring box inside his backpack. She didn’t know that the trip to Ken Fletcher park was also gonna be a setup for a marriage proposal.
Anyway, while they were heading to the park, they had a little conversation about the park itself.
“So Shelton.” Brandy began. “Have you been to this park before?”
“I have.” Shelton replied. “That park is phenomenal. The scenery is gorgeous. Not as stunning as the South Bank Parklands like the Grand Arbour, but it’s still fun. I was there before.. Uh.. probably back when I was a teenager.”
“So you have been here before?” Brandy asked.
“Yep. Good memories, I tell you.” Shelton replied. “So what was it like when you went to that park?”
“Well, I only went to that park just so I can relax.” Brandy explained. “I didn’t explore the sights or anything, I just relaxed, and it made me feel much better. That was only before I went to the doctors before they revealed the horrible truth, that being my infertility.”
“I see.” Shelton said. “Well, since you have your special man of the century with you, this night at the park will be even better for you.”
Shelton calling himself “The Special Man of the Century” made Brandy giggle happily. She loved Shelton’s humour.
Once they found a parking spot, Shelton and Brandy got out of the car, then they looked for a good spot to hang out at. That was until Brandy had a good spot choice.
“Hey, Shelton?” She began. “Let’s sit by the pond. That’s the relaxation spot.”

“Crikey.” Shelton said. “That’s actually a good spot.”
“Yeah.” Brandy said also. “I’ll show you.”
So Brandy led her boyfriend to the spot of the pond where she went to before. They set up the picnic blanket, they unwrapped the foil, and began enjoying their hot dogs. After they enjoyed their hot dogs, Shelton gave off a belch.
“Shelton.” Brandy said.
“Pardon me.” Shelton said also. “Sorry about that.”
Brandy chuckled. “It’s okay.” She said again. “I’m used to it.”
“Oh, yeah.” Shelton said, thinking about that conversation that he and Chilli had during the weekend-long marathon at the Heeler’s house. “I forgot about that story. Just like with Chilli, you’re used to that gross stuff.”
“Well, who cares if anything like that happens when I’m around?” Brandy asked as she and Shelton lied down on her back. “If it’s having a gravy stain on your stomach, smelly armpits, peeing on the floor when pulling out a nosehair, or letting off a fluffy, I’m used to that. Girls can have some disgusting moments too. So it’s pretty much equal.”
“Yeah, I get it.” Shelton said, taking in the words of what Brandy explained. “Things like that are rude in a way, but they give out the best laughs for the brighter side.”
Shelton and Brandy continued their conversations about spending quality time with families and sharing the funniest bits, what duties they had to attend to when doing their jobs, exploring some fancy places and stores, and the like.
They talked until the stars began to appear with the moon shining brightly over the couple. Shelton and Brandy were still on their backs, looking at the constellations and the shooting stars that were passing by every now and then.
Brandy sighs. “The stars are so pretty out here.” She said soothingly.
“They are indeed, my dear.” Shelton said also. “The stars also tell stories too.”
“They do?” Brandy asked.

“Yeah.” Shelton replied. “See? They always represent a specific person or thing that was so special to this world, that they didn’t last long. And they ended up here. In the sky.”
“Sounds kind of like my mum.” Brandy said.
“Yeah.” Shelton said also. “There are also famous celebrities who passed away like Robin Williams, Michael Jackson, Chadwick Boseman, Steve Irwin, and the like. The stars can tell their stories on how they became famous before they passed on into the afterlife.”
“I see. And also, where did you get that fact from?” Brandy asked.
“I got it from Shrek.” Shelton replied. “It’s actually a fun thing to do in real life because you get to tell your friends stories about famous people or things, or even your past family members and what they liked to do before they died.”
“Oh.” Brandy said, nodding her head. “Interesting. I love that.”
While they continued looking up at the stars, Shelton then remembered about the ring in his backpack. This was his chance to set everything up.
“Hold on, babe.” Shelton said, getting up. “I’ll be right back.”
Brandy sat up as she watched her boyfriend go over to his backpack. “Um.. what are you getting from there?” She asked.
Shelton was silent for a bit before answering. “It’s a surprise that I think you might like.”
Brandy’s eyes widened. “A surprise?” She asked excitedly, fluttering her eyes in the process.
“Yes.” Shelton replied as he got his phone and tripod. “Just give me a moment here.”
Brandy proceeded to wait while Shelton set up the tripod and slid his phone into the slot. He then opened the camera app, and started recording.
“Okay, Brandy.” He said, grabbing Brandy’s attention. “Ready for the surprise?”
Brandy looked at Shelton and stood up. “Yes.” She replied. “What is the surprise that you want to share with me?”
Shelton held the ring box behind him without Brandy knowing, then after he walked up to her, he kneeled down on one knee, looked up at her, and began to speak.

“Babe.” He began. “The real reason why I was setting up my phone and tripod over there, is because there is something that I want to explain to you before revealing the surprise.”
Shelton took a deep breath before continuing. “Brandy. Ever since we've become a couple and ever since we first met with each other, I want you to know that you've become the most important thing in my entire life. In fact, we've become important to each other. And before I even met you, my life felt like it had no meaning to it at all. I felt like I was incomplete altogether. I guess you can say that you're the same like me as well because you and I have the same thing in common about starting something that will make our lives better for us in the future. But that's beside the point.” He explained.
Brandy nodded her head understandably, yet she was a bit touched by Shelton’s words. Shelton pressed on, building up to revealing the gift.
“The point is, Brandy Cattle,” Shelton continued again. “On the behalf of how much time we spent together as a couple for 2 months and 5 days, on the behalf of me erasing your pain of infertility from the past, on the behalf of your beauty and your elegance with a pair of eyes that are like sapphires that shine like the sun during the day and the moon during the night, a beautiful smile that can make anyone else in this country smile, your hair that is as luscious and smooth and soft as your lips, and a voice so soft and soothing that it can make anybody feel more relaxed than ever, and on the behalf of helping you finally achieve your goal of starting a family of your own and beginning our legacy to have our very own kids,”
Shelton then revealed the ring box to Brandy, who was shedding a few tears over what Shelton had said about her. Shelton opened the ring box, revealing the titular golden ring with the blue diamond in the center.
Brandy’s breath caught in her throat as she threw her hands over her mouth after seeing the beautiful ring.
“Will you marry me?” Shelton asked, finishing his proposal to his girlfriend. He hoped that Brandy would give him the promised answer.

Brandy was speechless. She never realized that this special night-out was an engagement setup until just now. She put her hands over her chest as more tears of happiness ran down her face. With that, she held out her hand.
“Yes.” Brandy answered, sounding like she was about to cry.
Shelton, happy that his prayers returned, slid the ring onto Brandy’s finger. It was a perfect fit. Brandy had a good look at the gorgeous ring, wiping her tears away as she did.
“Shelton.” Brandy said. “You didn’t have to do this.”
“I had to, baby.” Shelton replied. “I want our future to be perfect. Like I said, you are the most important thing in my life and I would not let anything get in our way. Any problem that comes our way, we can work together to solve it.”
Brandy looked back at her boyfriend, her expression adoring. “I understand, sweetie.” She said before placing a hand on Shelton’s shoulder. “You’re the most important thing in my life too. And I want to be with you for all eternity.”
Shelton smiled brightly. “And that’s exactly what we both want, babycakes.” He said in a comfortable tone.
Afterwards, Brandy and Shelton shared another kiss that lasted for 10 seconds before they broke apart. Shelton then went to stop the recording.
Shelton sighs. “I am so happy about that.” He said. “Now what shall I do with the video?”
“I suggest that you share it with the world.” Brandy said. “We want our family members to know about this so that they can help with the arrangements for our wedding day.”
“Which will wait until next week.” Shelton added. “Because it takes time to set up a wedding like this.”
They both smiled. “Well, let’s not worry about that now, okay?” Brandy asked. “Let’s just go home, and wait for tomorrow to post the video online.”
“Right you are.” Shelton replied as he and Brandy gathered up the picnic blanket and foil wrappings.
While they headed back to the car, Brandy gave the ring back to Shelton and put it back in the ring box. As they got into the car and

buckled their seat belts, they drove off to Brandy's place first before Shelton had to head back to his own home. While they were driving, Brandy looked up at the night sky. She was not thinking about what her and Shelton's life would be like as a newlywed couple, but also about what their kids would look like.
"You know, Shelton." She began. "I've always thought about what our future kids would look like."
"Yeah?" Shelton asked.
"I know it's too early to think about, but ever since the IVF surgery, the thought about what our children would look like is just stuck into my head." Brandy continued. "But I think I'm just getting too excited."
"So am I, baby." Shelton replied. "I've always wanted to raise a family as a father and you always wanted to be a mother but couldn't because of your infertility, but here we are now."
The both of them chuckled. After the next little while, Shelton made it back to Brandy's place. Brandy opened the door, closed the door, then went over to Shelton's side of the car to say one more thing.
"Baby." She began. "I want to thank you again for that special night. I really hope that our future will be bright and perfect for each other."
"You're welcome." Shelton replied. "And I hope so too. And do you have your things?"
"Yep." Brandy replied cheerfully. "I have my stuff. Anyway, take care, Shelton."
"Take care." Shelton said back.
They shared one last kiss before Brandy went back onto the sidewalk to let Shelton pull out from the curb and onto the open road. When Shelton was out of view, Brandy went back inside her house, locked the door, and sighed happily. She then went upstairs to her bathroom, removed her makeup, removed her nightgown and daisy, and got ready for bed.
It had been a splendid night. Brandy couldn't get Shelton's remarks about her looks out of her head. She thought that Shelton mentioning every part of her is like him calling her the most

beautiful woman that he has ever met. She smiled throughout the whole night as the remarks filled her head.
She also dreamed about how her and Shelton's wedding will go. It might go well, it might not because something ought to happen to someone, but she mainly had her thoughts on the former. The wedding is just another story just ahead for Brandy and Shelton.
It has been a full week ever since the events of when Shelton proposed to Brandy. The following days that followed was a journey for the couple to spread the word about the wedding.
On Sunday, Shelton had sent the engagement video on the internet, where the Heelers, their family members, Mort, and Shelton's family members saw it. They texted Shelton about the video and promised to spread the word to the public. Shelton also had to put away all of the Halloween decorations since Christmas is coming.
On Monday, Shelton had to send some wedding role flyers to Calypso, Janelle and Chucky, Judo, Maynard, and some other additions. And soon, the roles were settled. Calypso as the Minister/Priest, Bandit, Stripe, Louie, and Rupert as the Groomsmen, Maynard as the Best Man, Chucky as the Ring Bearer, Petunia, Sussie, Lily, and Frisky as the bridesmaids, Janelle as the Maid Of Honour, and Judo as the Flower Girl.
On Tuesday, it was Brandy's turn to set up the wedding. For her, she went to a bakery to ask the employees to make a beautiful wedding cake. They accepted and said that it would only take 2 days for it to be ready. So with that, Brandy paid for the cake that will be ready in 2 days, and headed home to remind her boyfriend via text message.
On Wednesday, Shelton had reminded his family and friends that he'll be setting up the chairs and whatnot. He called up his Hammerbarn employee friends to help him with the tables, chairs, benches, carpet, stand, dancefloor, one of Shelton's instruments (that being an organ), and the like. They also had to help with setting up the food table too. It took a long while, but the job was finished and everything was ready.
On Thursday, Brandy had her turn of delivering some paper plates and napkins to her boyfriend's place. After she delivered them, Shelton brought them inside his mansion and set them on the dining

table. He wanted to wait until the big day came to set up the plates and napkins.
On Friday, the wedding cake was finished and Brandy called up Shelton to let him know that it was ready for pickup. So Shelton drove to the bakery and collected the cake. He wanted to wait until tomorrow to bring out the cake after the guests arrived.
And finally, on Saturday, the big day arrived. Shelton was thanking the pizza delivery guy for delivering the boxes filled with the Italian cuisine, non-alcoholic beverages, and the big bottles of soda. He takes one big whiff of the delicious food.
“Ooh, that is what I’m talking about.” He delightfully said.
Then there was a knock on the door. Shelton went over to the door and opened it. The first guests to arrive were the Heelers.
“Hello, Shelton.” They all said simultaneously.
“Hello, Heelers.” Shelton greeted back. “Welcome to my paradise.”
“Wow!” Bluey said, wagging her tail as she took in the surroundings along with her sister Bingo. “We love this place already!”
The adults laughed as Bluey and Bingo ran around the mansion looking at all of the stuff that they saw. They then drew their focus to each other.
“So how excited are you to see your sister getting married?” Shelton asked Chilli.
“Beautiful.” Chilli replied. “Just beautiful.”
“She’ll be the luckiest woman in the world.” Bandit joined in.
Shelton chuckled. “Well, I’m the luckier one.” He said. “I felt lonely at first, but with her, my life has become the best.”
Suddenly, the next car pulled into view. It was Shelton’s sisters.
“Go on, you guys.” Shelton said to Bandit and Chilli, pointing to the bowls of chips. “Help yourselves while I greet my siblings.”
The couple obliged as they headed to the table while Shelton stepped outside to greet his sisters.
Petunia was the first to step out of the car. “Big Brother!” She said as she ran to her brother.
“Petunia!” Shelton happily greeted as he held his arms out.
The both of them made contact, and as they did, they spun around, laughing with joy as they hugged each other tightly.

“How are you, little sis?” Shelton asked. “And how are the other two?”
“Oh, they’re doing swell.” Petunia said as she gently ran her hands down her hair. “And so am I.”
Sussie and Lily were the next ones to greet Shelton.
“Congratulations, big brother.” Lily said.
“Thank you all very much.” Shelton said, smiling adoringly.
This went on for a while. The next guests were the second Heelers, then came Shelton’s brothers, then Radley and Frisky, then Shelton’s parents, then Calypso and Mrs. Retriever, then Chris and Bob, then Wendy and Pat, and last but not least, Mort and Brandy. The family tree was complete, and all that was left was Shelton’s friends. Those being his Hammerbarn workmates. Even Chilli’s friends like Bella (Coco’s mom), Snickers’ mom, Mackenzie’s mom, Jack’s mom, Indy’s mom, and Rusty’s mom came. Then came Bandit’s friends like Frank (Chloe’s dad) was the last miscellaneous guest to arrive at Shelton's mansion.
When dinnertime struck, everyone began feasting on the slices of pizza. The adults got the big slices while the kids got the little slices. For Muffin, normally she would freak out and scream for a bigger piece, but here, she’s cool with it and decides to eat the little slice of pizza.
Meanwhile, with Shelton, his groomsmen, and his best man were in the bathroom next to the master bedroom. Shelton was getting his tuxedo put on.
“So just so you know, mate.” Maynard said to Shelton. “Bandit went and bought another ring for you after he saw that proposal video. He’ll give it to Chucky so that he can carry it over to you and your soon-to-be wife.”
“Okay.” Shelton replied. “I won’t know what it looks like anyway. It’s a surprise.”
“Well, not technically a surprise.” Rupert said. “But he’ll still bring it to you. You’ll still know about the fact that it’s a ring, it’s just that you don’t know what it looks like.”
“I know.” Shelton said as Maynard made the final adjustments on his tuxedo.

Shelton then walked up to the mirror and looked at himself. He checked every part of his tuxedo to make sure there were no crumbs or dust bunnies. Thankfully, there wasn't.
"Man, I look pretty sharp." Shelton said, standing in front of the mirror with pride.
"You do, brother." Louie replied.
"The crowd is gonna love you." Bandit added.
"And so will my parents and siblings." Shelton added also.
Meanwhile, in a different bathroom, Brandy was getting her wedding dress put on by her bridesmaids and maid of honour.
"Oh, Brandy," Sussie remarked. "You look so divine and gorgeous."
"Thank you." Brandy replied as she looked in the mirror and held the bouquet of flowers. "Shelton will love this."
"He sure will." Frisky replied.
"And so will your dad." Lily added.
"Now, Brandy." Janelle began. "You know what to do next. After everyone is settled as well as Shelton, you will make your grand entrance as soon as the busker guy plays "Here Comes The Bride". And do you want your dad to hold your hand on the way?"
"Gladly." Brandy replied.
Meanwhile, Judo and Chucky were getting themselves ready too.
"So what are you gonna do with being the flower girl?" Chucky asked.
"Just spread the flowers all over the carpet." Judo replied. "So what are you gonna do?"
"Bring the rings over to the groom and bride." Chucky replied. "And also, do you think we can get Mr. Sheltie's macaws to help us?"
Judo pondered the question for a bit before answering. "No. We're good." She said, "As much as we like to have Mr. Sheltie's macaws help us, I think we can handle this on our own."
"Ok. If you say so." Chucky replied.
So as the kids set off to their respective places, Shelton meanwhile, stepped out of the room and walked down the staircase and out the front door and to the side of the house. Shelton stood put while Shelton's groomsmen and Best Man went first. They took their places on the right side of the podium.

Meanwhile, with Brandy and her bridesmaids and Maid of Honor, she opened the door of one of the spare rooms and waited inside since Brandy wanted to surprise Shelton with the dress that she was wearing. They told her to wait until her father Mort comes in to let her know that it is time to make her grand entrance. As the bridesmaids and Maid of Honor take their place at the podium on the left side, one of them signals Calypso to take their place at the podium with the Priest speech. As she does this, she also signals Mort to go and let her daughter know that it is time.

Meanwhile, Shelton was at the side of the house with Chucky and Judo. As Shelton looked over at what was going on, Mort had already gone to get her daughter. This was Shelton's cue. Shelton walked along the carpet next to everyone. The crowd all had their phones out and started recording the big event. They have to make sure that they spread this to the public as well.

Shelton took place right next to the podium and faced the audience. Then after a while, Judo came next. She grabbed a handful of flower petals from the basket that she was carrying and sprinkled them all over, making a lovely path for the bride to walk on. She skipped happily along as she did this. The audience also cooed over her and so did her mom Wendy.

After Judo takes her place, Calypso sees Mort right around the corner. She signaled Busker to play the organ. Busker nodded his head and began to play "Here Comes The Bride" as Mort stood at the beginning of the carpet with his daughter in hand.

The audience gazed over at Brandy. She was indeed the most beautiful sight that anyone has ever seen. Her dress and the flowers that surrounded her head as well as the bouquet that she was holding really stood out to everyone, including Shelton, who had his mouth agape at the presence and appearance of his partner.

Brandy walked slowly along with her dad, her eyes locked on Shelton as she held the bouquet and with the music still progressing with each chord. She then took her place as she and Shelton turned and faced each other. Brandy handed the bouquet to Calypso and she placed it on a stand.

As the final notes of the song finished, Busker stopped playing, and turned around to face the moment that was about to unfold. Calypso cleared her throat as she spoke into the microphone and read out the speech.
“Welcome, loved ones.” She began. “We are gathered here today in the sight of God and these witnesses to join together Shelton Sheltie and Brandy Cattle in holy matrimony. In the months and days they have been together, their love and understanding of each other has grown and matured, and now they have decided to love their lives together as husband and wife.”
Calypso then draws her attention to the two lovers.
“Shelton Sheltie and Brandy Cattle,” She continued, “you have come together this day so that the Lord may seal and strengthen your love in the presence of this minister of His word and this community of family and friends and so, in this presence of this gathering, I ask you to state your intentions: Have you both come here freely and without reservation to give yourselves to each other in marriage? If so, answer by saying ‘I have’ or ‘I do’.”
Shelton and Brandy turned to face each other.
“I do.” They both said in unison.
Calypso then continues the speech. “True marriage is more than joining the bonds of marriage of two persons; it is the union of two hearts. It lives on the love you give each other and never grows old, but thrives on the joy of each new day. Marriage is love. May you always be able to talk things over, to confide in each other, to laugh with each other, to enjoy life together, and to share moments of quiet and peace, when the day is done. May you be blessed with a lifetime of happiness and a home of warmth and understanding.” She announced.
“Now, a reading from the Apostle Paul, Corinthians Chapter 13, verses 4 through 7:” Calypso continued. “Love is patient, love is kind. It does not envy, it does not boast, it is not proud. It is not rude, it is not self-seeking, it is not easily angered, it keeps no record of wrongs. Love does not delight in evil but rejoices with the truth. It always protects, always trusts, always hopes, always

perseveres. Let us pray for this man and woman as they make their marriage vows."
The big moment was coming, and Calypso was continuing her speech. "Father, as Shelton Sheltie and Brandy Cattle pledge themselves to each other, help them and bless them that their love may be pure, and their vows may be true. Through Jesus Christ our Lord, Amen." She said, bowing her head.
The crowd said "Amen" too.
Calypso then turned to Shelton. "Do you, Shelton Sheltie, take Brandy Cattle, to be your lawfully wedded wife, promising to love and cherish, through joy and sorrow, sickness and health, and whatever challenges you may face, for as long as you both shall live?" She asked.
"I, Shelton Sheltie take thee, Brandy Cattle to be my wedded wife, to have and to hold from this day forward, for better, for worse, for richer, for poorer, in sickness and in health, to love and to cherish, till death do us part. This is my solemn vow." Shelton said.
Calypso then turned to Brandy. "Do you, Brandy Cattle, take Shelton Sheltie to be your husband, to have and to hold from this day forward, for better or for worse, for richer, for poorer, in sickness and in health, to love and to cherish; from this day forward until death do you part?" She asked.
"I, Brandy Cattle, accept you Shelton Sheltie, as my companion and my husband. I promise to care for you, honor you, and cherish you, for as long as we both shall live. This is my solemn vow." Brandy said.
After the vows, Calypso said, "We are pleased to hear your vows. May we have the rings?"
Just then, Chucky walked down the path and then up to Shelton and Brandy. He held out the cushion with the rings on it, and Shelton glared at it. He was delighted by the one with the red diamond in the middle. He grabbed the rings off of the cushion and handed the red ring to Brandy as he held the blue one.
"I, Shelton Sheltie, give you Brandy Cattle this ring as an eternal symbol of my love and commitment to you." Shelton said as he held up the ring with the blue diamond. "With this ring, I thee wed."

Shelton then places the ring on Brandy's finger.
"I, Brandy Cattle, give you Shelton Sheltie this ring as an eternal symbol of my love and commitment to you." Brandy said as she held up the ring with the red diamond. "With this ring, I thee wed."
Brandy places the ring on Shelton's finger.
After this, Calypso continued her speech on the prayer part. "May Jesus Christ, Our Lord and Savior, always be at the center of the new lives you are now starting to build together, that you may know the ways of true love and kindness. May the Lord bless you both all the days of your lives and fill you with His joy. Amen."
"Amen." Said the crowd.
Then, the big moment came when Calypso read the pronouncement part of the speech and looked at both Shelton and Brandy. "By the power vested in me by the state of Queensland, I now pronounce you husband and wife! You may kiss the bride!"
After the pronouncement, Shelton and Brandy looked deeply at each other in the eyes before they moved closer to each other and pressed their lips against each other for their first ever kiss as husband and wife.
The crowd went wild, throwing their hands up into the air and cheering and whooping and clapping their hands as well. As the crowd simmered down, Calypso finished the last of the speech.
"Thank you all for joining in this joyous occasion for Shelton Sheltie and Brandy Cattle! They now invite you to join them for the reception. Thank you all!" She said as she walked off the podium.
The families all got up from the benches and went over to the newlywed couple.
"Shelton, my boy, I am so proud of you." Hugh said, giving his son a noogie.
"Aww, thank you so much, dad." Shelton replied. "I'm glad that you could make it here to see me get married."
Shelton then hugged his dad. His mom Barb also joined in the embrace too. And so did Louie and Rupert, and even Sussie, Petunia, and Lily.
Mort walked up to Brandy as the Sheltie's broke up the embrace.

“Brandy, my sweet, sweet girl.” Mort said, almost shedding a tear. “I’m happy to see that you found a special someone in your life. I’m proud of you, my girl.”
Mort then hugged Brandy really tight. Chilli also joined in on the hug too since she too was proud of seeing her sister getting married.
“You guys are the best.” Brandy said as they broke up the hug. “I feel like I’m gonna cry because.. This is the best moment of my life. And we all want it to stay this way.”
The congratulating went on for a while since there were so many people here, but after that was over, the newlywed couple and the guests went over to the tables and sat down to prepare themselves for a slice of wedding cake. As the cake was being sliced and handed out to one another, Shelton and Brandy made their way to the table with the microphone and waited until everyone, with a single slice of cake, was seated.
As soon as everyone was seated, Shelton then turned on the mic, the slight feedback grabbing everyone’s attention as Shelton blew into the mic once.
“Hello, mates.” Shelton began his speech. “I just want to say thank you all for coming here today to witness me and Brandy share our first ever kiss as a newlywed couple. You guys are wondering how me and Brandy’s story began. So, I’ll tell you.”
The crowd muttered and Brandy glared up at Shelton to listen to his speech.
“So..” Shelton said. “The story all began when I was at Hammerbarn doing my business until the beautiful and divine lady known as Brandy walked up. When laying eyes on her for the first time, she was the girl of my dreams. But, we’ll get to that in a bit. So Brandy once suffered from a condition known as infertility. A condition where a woman at a certain age cannot gain the ability to achieve pregnancy anymore and cannot have kids. When Brandy told me that story, I was heartbroken by it. And I felt bad for her. As for my story, I don’t want loneliness in me. But I got over it since I not only have some birds as pets, but I now have my new partner as my companion to help me in life.”
The crowd cooed after Shelton said that.

“And now,” Shelton continued. “Here we are. At the best moment in our lives where we share this blissful wedding party. Here in my backyard. And you also might be asking if we might be going on a honeymoon after this. The answer? No.”
The crowd nodded their heads understandably and muttered quietly.
“But hey,” Shelton continued, shrugging his shoulders. “Not every newlywed couple can go on a honeymoon. Sometimes they prefer to stay. And that’s no big deal. And what matters is that you and your partner are always having the best time of your life. So thank you all once again for coming here, and feel free to enjoy the rest of your day at this party. Shelton out.”
The crowd cheered and clapped once more as Shelton dropped the mic and walked off. Brandy put the mic back on the stand and went over to her partner.
“Beautiful speech, hun.” Brandy said.
“Thank you, babe.” Shelton replied. He then went over to Busker.
“Hey, mate. Let’s get that music going, shall we?”
“Oh, yes.” Said Busker. “Let’s party!”
Busker started up the music and it played through the speakers. Everyone then got up on the dance floor and began to dance the night away. As the other guests and family members danced, Shelton and Brandy were doing a two-partner dance and just having a joyous time. They then stopped moving to take a moment and look into each other’s eyes.
“Are you having a good time, love?” Shelton asked.
“I sure am.” Brandy replied. “And I’m more happy to have you as my husband.”
“And I’m more happy to have you as my wife.” Shelton said also.
“And your last name will be changed to ‘Sheltie’ from now on. You’re a part of the Sheltie family tree now.”
Brandy beamed. “I’ll take it. I’m glad to be in both the Cattle and Sheltie families.”
After that little moment, Shelton and Brandy continued their dancing.

The rest of the night went by like usual with the dancing on the dance floor and whatnot. After the cake was eaten (some of which were still on the cake tray), and the selection of songs completed, the wedding day was finally over and everyone was heading home now. They had a blast. They all enjoyed some pizza, had some non-alcoholic beverages, and enjoyed the slices of cake. But the most important thing that they enjoyed the most, was witnessing Shelton and Brandy become the new husband and wife.

After everyone had gone home, Shelton and Brandy had to clean everything up, but waited until tomorrow to clean up everything else. This was Shelton and Brandy's best day of their lives yet.

It had been about a week after the wedding of Shelton and Brandy. It was November 14th, and Shelton and Brandy had now begun their journey to start the long-awaited family that Brandy had been desperate to achieve. They had to do this fast because the sperm eggs inside of Brandy's system are on a time limit. So they got to work straight away.

Before the couple began their.. Um.. private nights, which we won't discuss since it's a bit too inappropriate yet that's how it all works if a couple wants to start a family, Shelton had gathered up some pills and syringes with the drugs and medicine that will prevent any diseases like HIV/AIDS, or Syphilis from happening when Brandy's child is born. They want everything to remain healthy and not have any diseases happen to not just them, but their baby too.

So after their pre-session of taking some pills to prevent HIV/AIDS, they started their session and after that, they did their post-session by taking some syringes and injected the drugs that cure Syphilis.

So then comes the next type of session that Shelton and Brandy have that will speed up the sperm eggs to get them to the destination that is the fallopian tube and then the uterus. They only did this 2 to 3 times a week since Shelton wanted Brandy to achieve pregnancy in one month.

Today was December 14th. Shelton's mansion was decorated with lights, a Christmas tree in the living room, and lots of other colourful decorations and objects. While the countdown to Christmas is 11 days away, Brandy was lying down on the living room chair. She was

waiting for her husband to come home. She was tired after the previous weeks of moving all of her stuff into Shelton's place after the wedding besides their private sessions for each week. She had to go through those every Monday, Wednesday, and Friday, while on Tuesday, Thursday, and the weekdays, she and her husband had to help move all of her stuff out of her house and into the mansion.
Suddenly, there was a knock at the door. Brandy got up from the chair and went to the door. She opened it and was greeted by her loving husband.
"Hello, my sugar plump." Shelton sweetly greeted.
"Hello, handsome." Brandy said as she gave her husband a quick kiss on the lips. "Did you enjoy your errand run?"
"Yeah." Shelton replied. "I had to run to the store to grab some things for our Christmas dinner coming on the 24th."
Shelton set the stuff to the side. "I also had to go and grab something from the mailbox too." He continued. "And, yes. It's bills."
"Figures." Brandy said. "It's not a big deal to you since you have so much money."
"I know, honey." Shelton said as he set the bills down and turned to face his wife. "And I also had to run to the doctors and asked them for something."
"What did you ask them for?" Brandy asked, her brow raised in curiosity.
Shelton then held up a package containing a pregnancy test. "I asked them for this." He said.
Brandy let out a slight gasp. "Shelton." She said, "You shouldn't have. You want us to.."
"Yep." Shelton replied, taking the test out of the package and finishing what his wife was about to say. "I want you to take the test here. In our home. Privately. And if the results are what we promised, then we can share this to the public. Everyone will be happy about this."
Brandy clutched her chest over Shelton's suggestion. "Aww, you know what, babe? I'll take it."
"Excellent!" Shelton said happily. "Then we shall start now."

So the couple went over to the couch and sat down. Shelton handed the pregnancy test to Brandy and Brandy took the cap off. Brandy took a deep breath and looked at her husband.
“Are you ready to see what the results will be?” She asked.
“Ready, babe.” Shelton said, placing his hand on his wife’s shoulder.
So with that, Brandy put the test into her urethra and collected her samples of what she needed to see the results. The anticipation hung high as Shelton looked away and Brandy started to sweat. The anticipation and suspense became too much to handle, and Brandy took the test out, hoping to see if it’s the two lines that they have been dying to see. Suddenly, a miracle came upon the couple as Brandy let out a loud gasp.
“Shelton!” She said excitedly, sounding like she was about to cry. “We did it!”
Shelton uncovered his eyes. “What?!” He exclaimed. “No way!”
They both looked at the results, and wouldn’t you believe it, the pregnancy test showed the two lines. Brandy looks at her husband with tears in her eyes.
“I’m pregnant, Shelton.” She said, hugging him. “Just like we hoped for.”
Shelton had never been this happy. He hugged his wife back and gently kissed her on the forehead.
“I have never, in my life, been this proud.” He said warmly. “Now you’ll finally get the chance to have the family that you always wanted as well as the children to bore.”
Brandy and Shelton broke up their hug and looked at each other.
“Thank you, Shelton.” Brandy said as she formed her hands in the shape of a heart, but only the first half. “Thank you so much for giving me the things that I was desperate to achieve. Now everything is meant to be.”
“I know.” Shelton replied. “You said it before after the surgery, and again, you are very welcome, my beautiful sugar girl.”
Shelton formed his hands into the next half of the heart and put it next to Brandy’s half heart hand, thus completing the fully-shaped heart. They were venturing on a new path now. The path that will

lead them to their destination. And that destination is Brandy giving birth to their baby.
As the next 38 weeks went by, Shelton and Brandy returned to their workplaces, they celebrated Christmas Day, they celebrated New Years, all of that jazz. The catch to this journey is that Brandy had habits to adopt in order to make sure their baby is healthy and to make sure that she stayed healthy too. Those include eating healthy foods, taking parental vitamins, going for some parental checkups, exercising regularly, sleeping for seven to eight hours, maintaining her posture so she won't get any back pains, and including physical fitness and exercise in order to help her stay strong and ease any back discomfort.
Shelton was there to help her with all of that. He made some healthy meals, booked every checkup, gave her vitamins, exercised with her, went to bed at the right time with her, and propped up extra pillows to help maintain her posture.
Right now, it is September 7th. Brandy's baby bump has grown to full size. She held up an ultrasound scan picture of her baby that was given to her and her husband on the 25th week, which was June 8th. She sighs happily as she rubs her stomach, which is carrying her little miracle inside.
"Almost 9 months later, and the baby is in full development." She said quietly, her eyes looking down at her bump. "Me and my husband are gonna be so happy to see you."
Just then, Shelton opened the bedroom door and entered the bedroom.
"Brandy, honey." Shelton called out. "I got a message from Chilli." He then noticed his wife's baby bump. "Aww." He cooed. "I reckon that the baby is in full development?"
"Yes it is, Shelton." Brandy replied. "And it's still kicking. Our little miracle is almost there. Just not yet, they still have to wait."
Shelton leaned down on one knee and placed an ear on his wife's stomach. He then felt the kick of the baby inside of Brandy's womb, as if the baby inside was greeting their father for the first time.
Shelton then placed his hands on Brandy's stomach. He then plants a kiss on her stomach.

“Stay strong in there, little one.” Shelton said quietly. “You’re almost there.”
Brandy smiled adoringly as her husband kissed her stomach with the baby inside. Shelton then got up so they could talk about the message Chilli sent.
“So anyway, about the message that my sister sent.” Brandy began. “What did she say?”
“She said that Radley and Frisky are having a wedding party at her house and it will start at around dinner time.” Shelton explained. “So we can head straight there when the time is right.”
“Oh, yeah. Them. That’s cute that they’re getting married.” Brandy said. “And what would Chilli say when she sees my baby bump? You haven’t really posted any updates on your socials other than my pregnancy announcement.”
“Yeah, sorry about that. I was busy helping you make sure you don’t get back pains or get stretch marks.” Shelton said. “But, I think Chilli would fall head over heels in love with your baby bump.”
“It’s okay, honey.” Brandy said. “I get that you were trying to help me. I suppose you wanted to keep the baby development a secret. I’m totally cool with it.”
“Anyway,” continued Shelton. “Let’s get some tea at the coffee shop around..” He pondered for a bit. “How about at 3:50pm?”
“Sure.” Brandy said. “I can go for some tea before going to the wedding.”
With that, Shelton and Brandy continued with the rest of their day, doing whatever they had in mind before 3:50pm hit. They got into the car, drove off to the coffee shop, and got two green teas. They went to the seats and sipped their tea as Brandy looked at her stomach and rubbed it gently.
“What name do you think would be fitting for our baby?” Brandy asked.
“Honestly, baby,” Shelton replied. “I have no idea what to name our baby.” As he sips his tea, an idea then flies into his head. “Brandy? I think I have the perfect name for our little one.”
“What name are you thinking of?” Brandy asked again.

“I’m thinking of the name “Leonard”.” Shelton replied again. “Do you agree with that name choice?”
Brandy pondered the name choice for a bit. “Leonard, eh?” She asked. “I think that name could work.”
“I also thought of other nicknames for them too.” Shelton continued. “Want to hear them?”
“Sure.” Brandy replied.
“So,” Shelton said as he took another sip of his tea. “I think the nicknames for Leonard will be “Little Lucky Leo”, “Brandy’s Little Miracle”, and just “Leo” as a short version of his full name. What do you think?”
Brandy pondered the choice of name for a little bit. The name “Leonard” sounded generic, but it was actually a good name for their baby, it might be the bestest name that they could come up with.
“Leonard is a nice name.” Brandy said. “It might not be a good pick, but I’ll roll with it since it’s the bestest name that we can give it.”
Shelton shrugged. “Yeah. Most names are hard to pick out. I unfortunately didn’t do any research to see if I could come up with a name for our little one.” He said.
“It’s fine, honey.” Brandy replied. “I agree with what you said. When doing research, it becomes hard for you to name your child. So Leonard is the best name we can give our little miracle.”
“And what about the nicknames?” Shelton asked as he sipped his tea again.
“I love them.” Brandy replied. “They’re adorable nicknames. The nickname of calling it my little miracle is my favourite because it makes sense of what I was really desperate for.”
“Glad that you love those nicknames, baby.” Shelton said again.
By the time they finished their tea and paid for the drinks, they headed out the door and made their journey to the Heeler house. It was a long walk, but it was good exercise for them. Once the house was in sight, Brandy could see Chilli greeting the guests as they came by to attend Radley and Frisky’s wedding. Brandy gave off an adoring expression as she rubbed her stomach. She looked at her husband.

“Are you ready to see Chilli’s reaction to my baby bump?” Brandy asked.
“Of course, Brandy.” Shelton answered as they made their way over to Chilli.
As Shelton and Brandy made their way to the house, Shelton let Brandy go first and greet Chilli. Chilli noticed her sister and they both shared a hug. Chilli notices the baby bump that Brandy has and comments on it. Shelton then came by and told them about their journey and said that they wanted to keep this a secret before spreading the word. Chilli was cool with it since they also wanted to surprise her too.
The wedding of Radley and Frisky played out like normal. The guests having their dinner and their conversations, the main event of Radley and Frisky sharing their first kiss as husband and wife, the guests having the cake, Radley making his speech about staying instead of going out west, and finally, the guests going onto the dance floor to party the night away.
Since Brandy had her precious cargo inside of her womb, she was being careful and cautious when dancing. She had to dance lightly, which she was fine with. As the day ended, all the guests were returning home, all except for Shelton and Brandy, who had a chat with Chilli about what happened before the wedding. It was all about how Frisky got angry about going out west after the wedding so she and the girls had to chase her down, while getting pulled over by a cop and stopping for juice in the process. And the rest of the story was that they found Frisky and Radley showed up too to tell Frisky that he changed his mind, in which Frisky was happy to hear, which led her to announce that the wedding was back on.
After that conversation and story, Shelton and Brandy walked back to their mansion, happy to see how excited Chilli was to see her sister’s baby bump, and happy about the wedding too.
The couple had only 2 more weeks and 5 more days left before the baby is ready to be born, so they’ll make sure to prepare themselves to see their own baby for the very first time.
Description:
Name:

Shelton Sheltie
Gender:
Male
Type of Dog Breed:
Shetland Sheepdog
Health Status (Physical/Mental):
Healthy in all aspects
Age:
Unknown-early to mid 40s (same age as Brandy)
Birthday:
Same as Brandy
Family Members:
Hugh & Barb Sheltie (Parents), Louie Sheltie (Younger Brother), Rupert Sheltie (Youngest Brother), Sussie Sheltie (Oldest Sister), Petunia Sheltie (Younger Sister), and Lily Sheltie (Youngest Sister)
Nationality:
Australia
Sexuality:
Straight
Fur Color:
White, light brown, and dark brown
Distinguishing Characteristics:
Beard whiskers on muzzle
Key Personality Traits:
Helpful, kind, gentle, smart, organized, wise, proud, strong, calm, appreciative, brilliant, caring, cheerful, clean, creative, happy, admirable, flexible, friendly, honest, humorous, healthy, hardworking, good-natured, generous, forgiving, focused, knowledge, masculine, open, passionate, patient, peaceful, protective, relaxed, reliable, sweet, understanding, and sharing.
Sense of Humor:
A charming and funny sense of humor
Intelligence Level:
Incredibly smart
Patience Level:
Very high
Work Ethic:
A very hard worker at the Hammerbarn store who doesn’t get too overworked with anything else
Special Skills/Achievements:

Is a professional and is really great at everything
Special Interests:
Likes giant monster stuff (Godzilla & Pacific Rim), trains, animated films, dinosaurs, and music
Friends:
The other Hammerbarn employees that he works with
Love Interest(s)/Girlfriend:
Brandy Cattle
Likes:
Being with Brandy, looking after his Macaws, singing/dancing to any song that he would listen to, helping citizens that are feeling down, doing any of his hobbies, and working at the Hammerbarn store
Dislikes:
Seeing upset citizens, being alone
Hobbies:
Instrument player (basically can play any instrument), sketching/drawing, cooking, singing/dancing, reading, working (specifically at the Hammerbarn store), computer stuff, and video gaming (only when he’s finished working at the Hammerbarn store)
Pets:
Four Macaws. A Scarlet Macaw which he named Clark, a Blue and Gold Macaw which he named Lance, a Green Wing Macaw which he named Marcel, and a Harlequin Macaw which he named Stewart. All of them were adopted by him
Favorite Things:
Godzilla, Eragon, and Coldplay
Voice Actor:
Stephen Merchant (Wheatley from Portal)
Personality:
Shelton is a very kind and good-hearted citizen who likes to help out other citizens that are feeling down. He loves to be with Brandy and he likes to help her in any situation as well as spend time with her. He also likes to be a really good hard working employee at Hammerbarn.
Appearence:
Shelton Sheltie is a Shetland Sheepdog with white, light brown, and dark brown fur. He has white feet, tail tip, hands, eyebrows, chest, and muzzle, light brown legs, tail, arms, and torso, and dark brown ears (that are slightly folded like Stripe’s), and head hair. He also has a black nose and a small tuft of fur on his white chest patch. He’s also masculine and manly much like

Radley Heeler. He bears a similar appearance to the Rough Collie Surfer, but with a few differences.

Biography:

Shelton is one of the members of the Sheltie family. He is the older brother to all of his other siblings and the oldest son in the family. He works as an employee at Hammerbarn.

He was the first one to be born in the family. His parents gave him the name “Shelton” because it sounds like an alliteration with their last names. When his two other brothers and three other sisters were born, he never felt a sense of jealousy. He likes them because he thinks that they’re just as special as him. He enjoyed being with his parents and siblings when he got older.

He enjoyed playing video games with his other siblings as well as reading before he goes to bed. When he turned 16, he started to become a bodybuilder and learned how to eat healthy in order to stay fit.

When he turned 17, he learned how to both cook food, and plant flowers. The Sheltie family had a beautiful flower garden in their backyard so Shelton learned how to plant and water the flowers.

When he first went to school at the age of 6, he made a few friends and he likes to chat with them every now and then whenever he feels like it. He graduated when he was 18 years old and when he finished school, he felt like he'd never see his friends again. But his parents reassured him saying that it’s not really the best thing to happen to anybody, but you’ll eventually reunite with them at some point. And that's how Shelton had the dislike of being alone.

He became a strong, masculine, and manly man after a lot of working out and eating healthy when he was 20 years old. He’s also very athletic and agile when it comes to acrobatics.

When he was 21, his parents decided to give him a job at the Hammerbarn store. And after he applied for it and got the job, he started off as a rookie when he was given the task to stock the shelves in all parts of the place. As the years went by, his boss would give him money as a reward for being a really good hard worker.

When he was 25, Shelton’s parents then created a bank account for him for his money that he earns at work and they also made him a debit card for when he goes to stores or restaurants and a credit card whenever he buys stuff online.

When he was 26, he signed up for a driving class. He was able to handle the capabilities of driving in a very easy manner since he read all about how to drive a car and what each of the controls meant. After he passed everything

in his driving lessons, he bought his very first car. It was a Chevrolet Trailblazer SUV that he had enough money to purchase.
By the time he was 29, he was able to gain the skill of helping out other citizens whenever they needed help with something or whenever they felt down.
When he was in his early to mid 30s, his parents gave him an apartment that he could live in. It was close to a grocery store where he could walk to without using his car. He helped out with packing his stuff and taking them to the apartment. He was used to being alone in the apartment, but he still felt like he needed to be with someone or have a pet so that he can have some extra companionship around here.
When he was in his early to mid 40s (his current age), he went for a nice long night stroll down the sidewalk of the Brisbane neighborhood. When he walked past the Heelers house, he heard a loud argument behind him. He turned around and he saw both Brandy and Chilli arguing with each other. Their conversation was about the likes of having children. Shelton was listening to their loud argument while also trying to search up a specific condition that he heard of but never understood what it meant. When Brandy and Chilli's argument ended, he walked the opposite direction back to his apartment. While walking back, he called his parents on his phone that his parents got for him when he was 24. He told them about the argument that he heard and was trying to figure out the definition of a specific condition that women usually get. They told Shelton that it was called infertility. Shelton now understood what it meant and he learned about the many ways of how to cure that condition.
A year later, he went to the grocery store and got a lottery ticket for free. The store employee said that this lottery ticket is special because the special prize was 50 million dollars. Once Shelton went back to his apartment, he turned on his TV and waited for the lottery ticket number to be revealed. Once it showed up and the numbers displayed on screen, he was surprised that those were the exact numbers. He beamed with excitement when he earned the 50 million dollar prize. Afterwards, he contacted his parents and told them about the lottery ticket and how much the prize was.
Another year went by and Shelton had the idea of buying himself a house that he could live in. He told his parents about it and they accepted. They tried looking all over different websites to see what house would be perfect for Shelton to live in. Shelton then pointed out a 3-story mansion that costs 10 million dollars. It had six bedrooms, six bathrooms, a large kitchen area, dining area, living area, garage, balcony, basement, and office space. It also had a large front lawn, a stone path that led to the front door, a gate at the

very front of the property, and a large driveway for him to park his car. And it also has a large backyard with a beautiful garden and a huge swimming pool. After lots and lots of arranging and planning, Shelton bought the property afterwards. His parents also helped him buy all of the appropriate stuff that he needed for his new home, like food for the pantry, fridge, and freezer, tools for his garage, and two computers for his studio room, one for working, and one for gaming. Shelton also bought a PlayStation 4 and he bought several games that he can play. He also bought some games on his computer on the Steam website. And he also bought a new phone, which was an iPhone 11. He even bought a large blue backpack with strawberries on it just so he could carry some of his stuff whenever he's visiting a park. He chose that specific backpack because strawberries were his favorite fruit as a kid. Afterwards, Shelton had everything that he had in his brand new mansion that he liked to call paradise. And what's interesting was that the mansion was close to where the Heelers live as well as close to where Stripe's house is. They were both right around the corner from the mansion.
Another year went by and Shelton had the idea of having a pet. He thought about having a bird as a pet. He told his parents about it and they gladly accepted. Once he got to the pet store, he asked if there's a bird that he could adopt as a pet. And the employee said that they have 4 beautiful multi-colored Macaws and they're ready for adoption. They were all male birds. Shelton paid for the adoption and he took the birds home with him. He also bought a huge bird cage for them. On his way home, he gave them each a name, which are Clark, Lance, Marcel, and Stewart. After he got home, he set up the cage and he put his birds in there. As the months went by, his Macaws were behaving like they should be. He remembered to both feed them and take them to their "potty place" so they can be potty trained.
Another year went by and Shelton wanted to buy a fancy sports car. His parents accepted the offer, and they decided to use their car to pick up Shelton and once they picked him up, they drove to the dealership. The car that Shelton bought was a 2019 Brabham BT62 that cost 1.8 million dollars. Because Shelton still had his millions of dollars that he got from his lottery ticket, he was able to purchase it afterwards. Shelton drove the sports car back to his mansion.
One week went by and Shelton bumped into Brandy. They suddenly started to form a bond with each other every time they would interact or hang out with each other. Shelton and Brandy would then become a couple that would last for all eternity.
P.S. this is my first piece of artwork that I've ever posted and my first OC character that I've made as well. I think Shelton looks really handsome for

the way I drew him. So I drew him on paper first, then coloured him in, and then I used scissors to cut him out. I also put his name on the back. But yeah, I really love the way it came out.
Here’s my artwork of Brandy Cattle's boyfriend, Shelton Sheltie, and his various expressions.
Top section:
Flirtatious/sly/bedroom eyes expression
Scared/surprised expression
Singing expression
Manly expression
Middle section:
Hit in the groin expression
Embarrassed/bashful expression
Aye/yo/wassup expression
Please face expression
Munching on chips expression
Bottom section:
Normal smile expression
Sad/worried expression
Unamused/unimpressed expression
Laughing in hysterics expression
Also, I plan on doing more artwork of not just my OC, but also my OC and Brandy Cattle spending time with each other.
Requested by @GabelovesBluey18
Here’s my Bluey OC, Shelton Sheltie making expressions if he were struggling to survive in the ocean.
And no worries, he was actually just mimicking them. Shelton always knows the safety and dangers of big open bodies of water.
The expressions that Gabe had listed down were already mentioned on a previous piece of artwork of my OC's expressions.
Here's an artwork of Shelton dressed in his Hammerbarn employee uniform. He's pointing out to a gnome that got broken by Bluey and Bingo when the Heelers went to the Hammerbarn store. With all of his effort, he fixed the gnome to its glory and perfection.
Shelton's also holding a Calippo popsicle in his hand as a reward for fixing that gnome.
Here's a turnaround artwork of my Bluey OC. My first artwork on Stripe Heeler from Bluey.
How did he end up in a pond of muddy water? Maybe he just tripped on a tree root and fell into it. And what would his wife Trixie and his daughters

Muffin and Socks think of this? They would probably think he was not too attentive to where he was stepping.
An artwork of my Bluey OC Shelton Sheltie meeting the woman that will later become his girlfriend, Brandy Cattle.
Also, this is my first artwork of Brandy.
The context here, is that Shelton could see in Brandy's eyes that she was suffering from infertility. So he explained to her on what that is and asked if it was true that she had this condition.
Brandy said that it is true and that she has been dealing with it ever since and explains that it was one of the reasons on why she distanced herself from her family. Brandy also explained to Shelton about her fight with her sister Chilli from four years ago and how it was about the likes of having a family and kids.
Shelton, feeling awfully saddened about Brandy's situation, decided to offer her some comfort and solace by giving her a shoulder massage just to make her feel better. In this case, it does make her feel better.
Shelton would also explain to Brandy about his story on how he had a dislike of being alone. He says that he is currently used to being alone, but he still wished that he had someone or something to give him extra companionship.
So apparently, both Shelton and Brandy were on the same page of starting a family of their own just so they can live better lives with each other.
Perhaps Shelton could give Brandy some surgery. He could take Brandy to the doctors so that they can get her systems to achieve pregnancy.
Side note: This part of my story of Shelton and Brandy takes place one week after the events of Onesies.
I drew this cute piece of artwork in order to celebrate my 21st birthday.
Here's the context/story to this deviation:
After Brandy's successful surgery as well as being able to finally get her systems to achieve pregnancy in order to have the family she longed for, Shelton and Brandy celebrated by doing the dance that Brandy and Chilli would do when they were little kids.
So as you can see, Brandy was teaching Shelton the steps of the dance and Shelton seems to be getting the hang of it. They seem to be having a splendid time, am I right?
Also, Shelton decided to play a song on his JBL Boombox speaker (even though it's not drawn in this deviation) in order to set the mood for him and Brandy's adorable dance session.
What song could it be? Well, you guys can decide what song Shelton and Brandy were dancing to by posting it in the comments.
Because I had many song choices myself, I decided to pick this one:

Here's the context/story to this deviation:
Shelton had a bright idea in his mind. It was the only solution in order for Brandy to become fertile and have her systems achieve pregnancy. That solution was surgery.
So with that, Shelton took Brandy with him to go to the surgeons. Once there, Shelton explained to the doctors that Brandy had infertility and asked if she can get some surgery in order to get her systems to achieve pregnancy. They said yes and said that it could take a while in order to get things prepped before they can begin to operate on Brandy.
So once Shelton and Brandy waited, they discussed their favourite things, their biggest interests, and their birthdays (of course Shelton and Brandy are the same age and would share the same birthday with each other).
After the wait, the doctors said that the surgeons were ready for Brandy. Shelton and Brandy, their hands intertwined, made their way to the surgeon area where Brandy laid down on the chair and Shelton told her not to worry and that she'll feel like her regular self once they were done.
As the time went by, the surgeons began their operation on Brandy while Shelton waited. The surgery procedure was only 30 minutes, so it didn't take too long. After the time passed, the surgeons were finished with the operation and began to slowly help Brandy recover from the surgery that they have given her in order for her to achieve pregnancy. They had prevented her from getting pregnant and Shelton knew that Brandy would understand that achieving pregnancy will wait.
As Shelton came into the room, Brandy had fully recovered from her operation. Shelton asked the surgeons if he could get the result paper and surprise her and they gladly accepted. So with that, Shelton rolled up the paper, and went over to Brandy to let them know that they finished and it was time to go.
As they walked out of the hospital, hand in hand, they made it to Shelton's SUV where Shelton revealed the result paper to her. Brandy viewed the paper and read what the results said. They said that they managed to make her systems gain the ability to achieve

pregnancy, thus, making her fertile. Even though they prevented the pregnancy from happening like every IFV surgery in the world, she understands that finally starting her own family will wait until the future.
Brandy would squeal in excitement at the results and walk up to Shelton to give him something as a way of saying thank you for helping her become fertile and hoping to start her very own family.
And this is the exact moment here. Isn't that a beautiful and adorable moment?
Brandy might even begin to start her own family with Shelton.
Welcome to your new happy life, Brandy.
Also, I have a perfect song choice for this beautiful moment.

Description

Here's the context/story to this deviation:
Shelton had a bright idea in his mind. It was the only solution in order for Brandy to become fertile and have her systems achieve pregnancy. That solution, was surgery.
So with that, Shelton took Brandy with him to go to the surgeons.
Once there, Shelton explained to the doctors that Brandy had infertility and asked if she can get some surgery in order to get her systems to achieve pregnancy. They said yes and said that it could take a while in order to get things prepped before they can begin to operate on Brandy.
So once Shelton and Brandy waited, they discussed to each about their favourite things, their biggest interests, and their birthdays (of course Shelton and Brandy are the same age and would share the same birthday with each other).
After the wait, the doctors said that the surgeons were ready for Brandy. Shelton and Brandy, their hands intertwined, made their way to the surgeon area where Brandy laid down on the chair and Shelton told her not to worry and that she'll feel like her regular self once they were done.
As the time went by, the surgeons began their operation on Brandy while Shelton waited. The surgery procedure was only 30 minutes, so it didn't take

too long. After the time passed, the surgeons were finished with the operation and began to slowly help Brandy recover from the surgery that they have given her in order for her to achieve pregnancy. They had prevented her from getting pregnant and Shelton knew that Brandy would understand that achieving pregnancy will wait.

As Shelton came into the room, Brandy had fully recovered from her operation. Shelton asked the surgeons if he could get the result paper and surprise her and they gladly accepted. So with that, Shelton rolled up the paper, and went over to Brandy to let them know that they finished and it was time to go.

As they walked out of the hospital, hand in hand, they made it to Shelton's SUV where Shelton revealed the result paper to her. Brandy viewed the paper and read what the results said. They said that they managed to make her systems gain the ability to achieve pregnancy, thus, making her fertile. Even though they prevented the pregnancy from happening like every IFV surgery in the world, she understands that finally starting her own family will wait until the future.

Brandy would squeal in excitement at the results and walk up to Shelton to give him something as a way of saying thank you for helping her become fertile and hoping to start her very own family.

And this is the exact moment here. Isn't that a beautiful and adorable moment?

Brandy might even begin to start her own family with Shelton. Welcome to your new happy life, Brandy.

I had this idea in my mind for quite some time. And now that I've finally drew it, it managed to come out amazingly.

From clockwise order:

Bottom left corner: Bandit and Chilli

Top left corner: Stripe and Trixie

Top right corner: Radley and Frisky

Bottom right corner: Shelton and Brandy

And as a side note, this is my first deviation for the following Bluey characters:

Bandit, Chilli, Trixie, Radley, and Frisky.
Here's an artwork of Shelton and Brandy wearing their beach outfits.
During the summer, these two just love to have fun in the sun.
This artwork is based off of that one Bluey episode where Bandit and Chilli do a dance together.
I couldn't remember the name of the episode, but I know that during that moment, Bandit was wearing some dress pants and Chilli was wearing a tutu and a crown.
Feel free to tell me what episode that was.
Anyway, this is my artwork of Shelton and his girlfriend Brandy doing a two-partner dance.
As you can see, Shelton is wearing a suit and bow tie. He also has his front hair combed and he's holding a rose in his mouth.
Brandy on the other hand, she's dressed in a beautiful red nightgown dress with white frills underneath. She also has lipstick on her lips and blue eyeshadow and longer eyelashes. She's even got a daisy in her hair.
What song do you think these two lovers are doing their two-partner dance to?

Why does the singer want to be free?

What does the song say about pain?

How is the setting described?

What does the song represent pink diamond

The song "Escapism" is widely interpreted by fans as deeply symbolic of *Pink Diamond's* journey, serving as a reflection of her desire to leave behind her restrictive life on *Homeworld*.

Key Interpretations regarding Pink Diamond:

- Desire for Freedom: The lyrics, which speak of wanting to be "free" and away from an "awful place," are often seen as a direct metaphor for *Pink*

Diamond's entrapment within her diamond status and the rigid expectations of her family.
- Identity Transformation: Many viewers view the song as representing her transition from the persona of *Pink Diamond* into her true self, *Rose Quartz*. In this context, "escapism" refers to her seeking relief from a life where she felt confined, seeking a path toward autonomy.
- A Universal Theme: While strongly associated with *Pink Diamond*, the song's themes of avoiding pain and seeking escape are also applied to other characters in *Steven Universe* (such as *Steven* himself or *Lapis Lazuli*), highlighting a shared struggle for liberation and emotional processing across the series.

While the song is a poignant reflection of *Pink Diamond's* backstory, it resonates throughout the show as an anthem for anyone attempting to move past trauma or oppressive circumstances.

The scenario you provided is a piece of ***fanfiction*** or a roleplay transcript. [1, 2]

- ***The Lion Guard Season 4 does not officially exist.*** The official Disney Junior animated series *The Lion Guard* concluded its run after ***Season 3***. The finale wrapped up the narrative with Kion marrying Queen Rani and being crowned King of the Tree of Life. [1, 2, 3, 4]
- ***The "Bipedal Protective Style" is a fan concept.*** Quadrupedal characters like Simba and Janja standing completely bipedal (on two legs) like humans or Bunga is not part of the official series canon.
- ***Fanmade Communities:*** Due to the show's enduring popularity, extensive "Season 4" fan projects, collaborative fan-fics, and alternate universes (AUs) thrive across platforms like the The Lion Guard Season 4 Fanon Wiki and Wattpad. [1, 2, 3]

Would you like to write another ***creative dialogue scene*** featuring these characters, or are you looking for details on how Janja's storyline ***officially concluded*** in the actual show? [1]

LEGO Batman: the series dark knight legacy channel

Episode List - The lion guard season 4 Wiki - Fandom

22 February 2021. Navigation. ← Previous. Next → Season 3. Season 5. Season 4 is the fourth fanon season of The Lion Guard and the first on The Lion Guard Seaso...

The lion guard season 4 Wiki

The Lion Guard - Season 4 - Episode 1 - The Break of Dawn - Wattpad

The Lion Guard - Season 4. Adventure. The Guard has gone to live in the Tree of Life, but new complications arise. Even with the Guard and Night Pride having of...

Wattpad

If you want Disney to officially make The Lion Guard Season 4, WE ... - Reddit

There was never supposed to be a fourth season, it was never a possibility: it was just people taking the showrunners' words out of context and/or misinterpreti...

Reddit

Janja | The Lion Guard Wiki - Fandom

Adult. Teenager. Cub. Meaning. Crafty / Artful. Gender. Male. Species. Spotted Hyena. Home. Outlands Volcano, Outlands. Alignment. Good (formerly bad) Affiliati...

The Lion Guard Wiki

DISNEY EXPOSED! WHY IT ABANDONED THE LION GUARD

Despite a successful three-season run and a well-received ending that left room for further exploration, Disney abruptly stopped production of The Lion Guard wi

8:55

YouTube·KionandKiara

(Lion Guard S4) This Is What Happened After Kion Became King At The Tree Of ...

In the last episode of the Lion Guard, Kion became Queen Ronnie's king at the Tree of Life. Everyone was happy, and some members of Kion's guard had found their

27s

YouTube·Film Secrets

> ***You said: Would you like to write another creative dialogue scene featuring these characters,***
>
> Would you like to write another creative dialogue scene featuring these characters,
>
> June 22, 2026

I would love to help you expand this fun storyline! Here is a continuation where Simba tries to take his first actual steps on two legs, much to the terror of Zazu.

Act I: The Royal Wobble

ZAZU

(Dropping out of the sky like a stone, his feathers ruffled in absolute panic)

Sire! Sire, thank goodness I found you! The Outlanders are—

(Zazu stops mid-sentence, his beak hanging open. He blinks rapidly, rubbing his eyes with his wingtips.)

By the Great Kings... Simba? What in the Pride Lands are you doing up there? You look like an oversized, furry banana!

SIMBA

(Wobbling slightly, his massive tail swishing frantically behind him for balance)

I am broadening my horizons, Zazu. Janja here says it improves border surveillance.

JANJA

(Smirking, nudging Cheezi with his elbow)

Yeah, bird-brain. It’s called a 'protective style.' Highly advanced stuff. Though the King here looks like he’s about to tip over into a thorn bush.

KION

(Placing a paw over his face, groaning)

Dad, please get down before the entire pride sees you. Kovu and Kiara will never let you hear the end of this.

SIMBA

(Ignoring Kion, taking a tentative, heavy step forward)

Nonsense, Kion. Leadership requires testing new ground. Literally. Watch this...

(Simba lifts his left hind leg. His massive frame tilts dangerously to the right. The ground groans under his weight.)

CHUNGU

(Ducking behind Cheezi)

Incoming! The golden mountain is falling!

SIMBA

(Catching himself at the last second, slamming his front paws back down to the earth with a loud thud, panting)

Okay... so walking is a work in progress.

JANJA

(Laughing out loud, walking over to pat Simba's front leg)

Don't sweat it, Your Highness. It takes core strength. You've got too much meat on those shoulders. Stick to sitting on Pride Rock, and leave the bipedal patrolling to the professionals.

If you want to keep the scene going, let me know:

- Should ***Nala or Kiara*** walk in and catch Simba in the act?
- Do you want the hyenas to try and ***teach Simba a specific "bipedal strut"***?
- Should a ***minor emergency*** happen that forces Simba to try and react while still on two legs?

You said: Should Nala or Kiara walk in and catch Simba in the act?

Should Nala or Kiara walk in and catch Simba in the act?

June 22, 2026

Act II: The Queen's Judgment

ZAZU

(Sighing with profound relief as Simba’s front paws hit the dirt)

Thank the stars. Gravity has triumphed over royalty. Now, if we can please return to the —

NALA

(Voice echoing from the ridge above)

Simba? Is everything alright down there? I heard a thud that shook the entire canyon.

KION

(Wincing, whispering)

Oh no. Mom's here.

(Nala trots down the rocky slope, her expression a mix of curiosity and regal calm. Beside her, Kiara follows, her eyes wide as she takes in the bizarre gathering of the Lion Guard, reformed hyenas, and a very sweaty, guilty-looking King.)

KIARA

(Snickering immediately, pointing a paw at her father)

Dad? Why are your hind legs covered in mud, and why does Janja look like he just won a prize?

SIMBA

(Quickly clearing his throat, puffing out his chest to look casual)

Nala! Kiara! We were just... discussing tactical maneuvers. Janja was demonstrating a unique posture for high-altitude scouting.

JANJA

(Grinning, standing entirely bipedal again and crossing his front paws confidently)

That's right, Queen Nala. The King was trying to join the Two-Leg Club. But honestly? He's got the balance of a newborn rhino.

NALA

(Walking a slow, amused circle around Simba, her tail flicking)

Is that so? A unique posture. And here I thought you were trying to imitate Bunga again, dear.

SIMBA

(Defensively)

It gives an excellent view of the border! Mufasa never thought of it, but—

NALA

(Interrupting with a warm chuckle, leaning her shoulder against his)

Mufasa preferred to keep all four paws firmly on the kingdom he was ruling, Simba. Besides, if you stand up like that permanently, how am I supposed to nudge your shoulder when you're being stubborn?

CHUNGU

(Whispering loudly to Cheezi)

See? Even the Queen thinks the giant golden bear looks silly.

How should we continue this scene? Let me know if you would like to:

- Have ***Kiara try the bipedal stance*** to see if she can do it better than her dad.

- Have ***Janja try to teach them a "bipedal strut"*** to prove hyenas are superior at it.
- Bring in ***Bunga***, who will undoubtedly claim he invented the style first.

You said: Have Janja try to teach them a "bipedal strut" to prove hyenas are superior at it.

Have Janja try to teach them a "bipedal strut" to prove hyenas are superior at it.

June 22, 2026

Act III: The Hyena Strut

JANJA

(Snorting with laughter, shaking his head)

Alright, alright, clear out, clear out! If the Royal Family is gonna try and walk like the elite, you need actual training. You lions are way too stiff. Look at you, Simba, you're standing like a frozen termite mound!

SIMBA

(Frowning, crossing his massive front legs tightly over his chest)

I am maintaining a posture of royal dignity, Janja.

JANJA

(Waving a dismissive paw)

Dignity don't keep you balanced, Your Highness. It’s all about the slouch. Cheezi, Chungu! Show 'em the rhythm!

(Cheezi and Chungu instantly pop up onto their hind legs. Cheezi’s tongue hangs out as he begins to bounce from side to side. Chungu sways his hips with surprisingly smooth coordination, his heavy shoulders bobbing to an imaginary beat.)

CHUNGU

(Grinning)

Step, bounce, drag the heel! Step, bounce, drag the heel!

JANJA

(Strutting in a circle around Kiara and Kion, perfectly balanced on his hind paws)

See that? You gotta drop your center of gravity. Keep the knees bent. Let your front paws just hang loose, like you don't care about a thing in the world. It’s a swagger. Try it, Princess.

KIARA

(Giggling, stepping forward)

Alright, fine. Let’s see... drop the center, bend the knees...

(Kiara plants her back paws and heaves herself upward. She wobbles for a split second, but her lighter frame allows her to find her balance much faster than Simba did. She stands upright, letting her front paws dangle awkwardly like Janja suggested.)

KION

(Blinking in shock)

Kiara, no way. You're actually doing it.

KIARA

(Taking a cautious, bouncing step forward, mimicking Chungu)

Step... bounce... drag the heel! Hey, this actually *is* easier! Look at me, Dad!

SIMBA

(Staring in absolute disbelief, his jaw dropping)

Kiara, you are the future Queen of the Pride Lands! You cannot just bounce-drag your way across the savannah!

NALA

(Smirking, watching her daughter with an amused glint in her eyes)

Oh, I don't know, Simba. I think she carries it off rather well. Though, if Rafiki sees this, he's going to think we all ate some bad berries.

What should happen next in this lesson? Choose how we advance the story:

- Should ***Simba try the "hyena strut"*** to prove he can do it, resulting in total chaos?
- Should ***Bunga and the rest of the Lion Guard*** finally arrive and join the dance?
- Should a ***herd of confused giraffes*** walk by and stare at the entire royal family acting like hyenas?

You said: lion guard season 4 Janja feeling really ashamed about his past actions and Wema and Tunu sing a comforting song to cheer him up fanfic

lion guard season 4 Janja feeling really ashamed about his past actions and Wema and Tunu sing a comforting song to cheer him up fanfic

June 25, 2026

Act IV: Shadows of the Past

The playful mood evaporates as Janja's bipedal strut brings him face-to-face with Kion. Seeing the Mark of the Guard on Kion's shoulder triggers a sudden, heavy memory. Janja freezes. He drops heavily back onto all four paws, the dirt puffing up around his claws. His ears pin flat against his head.

JANJA

(Muttering, looking at the ground)

Yeah, well... laughing and playing around. I forget sometimes. I don't belong in a circle like this.

KIARA

(Dropping back down, her smile fading)

Janja? What's wrong?

JANJA

(Voice dropping to a bitter whisper, his tail tucked)

Nothing. Just... remembering. I spent years trying to tear this place apart. I tried to destroy the Pride Lands. I tried to hurt you, Kiara. I tried to get rid of Kion. Standing here acting like we're buddies... it just feels wrong. I don't deserve to hold my head high. Bipedal, quadrupedal, whatever.

(A heavy silence falls over the canyon. Simba and Nala exchange a softened, understanding look. Before Kion can step forward, two small, furry blurs scramble down from the rocks. It is Tunu and Wema, the young hyena pups Janja once saved.)

WEMA

(Trotting up to Janja, bumping her small head against his front leg)

Janja! Don't say that.

TUNU

(Nodding eagerly, his big ears flopping)

Yeah! The old days are gone. You’re our hero now.

JANJA

(Sighing, looking away from them)

I’m no hero, kids. I’m just a guy who stopped being bad. That doesn't erase the scars I left behind.

(Wema and Tunu exchange a look. Wema takes a deep breath, sitting down on her haunches. She begins to sing in a soft, sweet voice, her tone cutting through the heavy atmosphere. Tunu joins in, his higher voice harmonizing perfectly.)

Song: "The Tracks We Leave Behind"

(WEMA)

The mud will dry, the rain will fall,

The shadows fade against the wall.

You look at the dirt and you see the stains,

But the grass grows back after the rains.

(TUNU)

The tracks you made in the dark of night,

Don't matter now that you're in the light.

You turned around, you chose a new track,

The Pride Lands are safe, and we're not looking back.

(WEMA & TUNU)

So hold your head up, look at the sky,

You don't have to run, you don't have to hide.

The past is a river that flows to the sea,

You are the leader you chose to be!

(As the final notes fade, Wema sits back up on her hind legs, perfectly balanced, smiling up at Janja. Tunu pops up right next to her, holding his front paws out.)

WEMA

See, Janja? We learned the protective style from you. Because you protect us.

JANJA

(His eyes blinking rapidly, a rare, genuine softness breaking through his tough exterior. He slowly lifts himself back up onto his hind legs, looking down at the pups with a small, crooked smile.)

You kids... you're gonna make a tough hyena cry. Knock it off.

SIMBA

(Stepping forward, his deep voice carrying absolute authority and warmth)

The pups are right, Janja. A leader isn't judged by where he started, but by where he guides his pack today. You are welcome at our borders. On two legs or four.

How should we conclude this emotional moment? Let me know if you would like to:

- Have ***Janja finally accept Simba's friendship*** with a formal salute or handshake.
- Have ***Kion step up to talk to Janja*** about their shared burdens of leadership.
- Turn it back to comedy with ***Cheezi and Chungu trying to join the song*** and ruining the mood.

You said: Have Janja finally accept Simba's friendship with a formal salute or handshake.

Have Janja finally accept Simba's friendship with a formal salute or handshake.

June 25, 2026

Act V: A Royal Accord

JANJA

(Looking at Simba, his throat tightening slightly. He swallows his pride, his ears slowly rising from his skull.)

I... I don't really know how to do the whole royal forgiveness thing, Simba. In the Outlands, if you make a mistake, you usually get thrown into a volcano or chased out by a crocodile.

SIMBA

(Smiling warmly, stepping closer)

Good thing we are in the Pride Lands, Janja. Here, we extend a paw.

(Simba remains standing tall on his hind legs. With absolute grace, he extends his massive right front paw forward, holding it out open-palmed in a classic human-style gesture of peace.)

JANJA

(Staring at the massive, clawed paw. He chuckles nervously, balancing carefully on his hind legs.)

Alright. But if I fall over, nobody laughs. Especially you, Zazu.

ZAZU

(Muttering from a high rock, crossing his wings)

I make no promises to a bipedal hyena.

(Janja brings his right front paw forward. His smaller, dark grey paw clasps firmly into Simba's massive golden one. They share a solid, deliberate handshake. Janja adds a sharp, respectful nod—an official Outland salute of allegiance.)

JANJA

To the future of the Pride Lands, Your Highness. Side by side.

SIMBA

(Squeezing firmly before letting go)

To the future, Janja.

CHUNGU

(Wiping a massive tear from his eye with a paw, blubbering)

Oh, Cheezi... look at them! It's so beautiful! They're like two giant bears making up!

CHEEZI

(Nodding frantically, chewing on a stick out of pure emotional excitement)

Yeah! Bears!

JANJA

(Dropping back down to all four paws, his usual smirking confidence completely restored)

Alright, alright, break it up, you fur-balls! The emotional stuff is over. We've got a border to patrol, and apparently, I have to teach the Princess how to actually walk like a professional.

(Kiara laughs, dropping down alongside Kion and Nala as the tense energy fully dissipates into the warm afternoon air.)

Would you like to ***end the story here*** with a classic fade-out, or should we write a short ***epilogue scene***showing Janja and the Guard patrolling the border together using their new "style"?

You said: lion guard prequel of shenzi banzai and the ed

lion guard prequel of shenzi banzai and the ed

July 1, 2026

1 site

Act I: The Scavengers of the Shadowlands

Long before Janja ruled the Caldera, and decades before Kion wore the Mark of the Guard, the Outlands belonged to a different trio. The sun is setting over the jagged rocks of the Elephant Graveyard. A young, sleek Shenzi sits atop a massive mammoth skull, her eyes scanning the barren, dusty wastes.

Below her, Banzai is aggressively gnawing on a completely dry bone, growing more frustrated by the second. Ed is sitting nearby, chewing intently on his own left hind leg, completely oblivious to his surroundings. [1]

BANZAI

(Spitting out a chunk of dirt, groaning)

Gah! Dust. More dust. And for dinner? A side of dry calcium. Shenzi, my stomach is shrinking. I swear it's the size of a beetle. If we don't get some real meat soon, I'm gonna eat Ed.

ED

(Stops chewing his leg, looks up with wide eyes, and lets out a frantic, panicked cackle)

SHENZI

(Flicking her ears, not looking down)

Relax, Banzai. Eat Ed and you lose fifty percent of our total brainpower. Besides, complaining won't fill the pantry. We have to be smart. The Pride Lands are bursting with gazelle, and King Ahadi's guards can't watch every single border crack.

BANZAI

(Dropping the bone, his ears pinning back)

Ahadi. Don't even say his name. That oversized rug nearly took my ear off last week just because I sniffed a dead bush near the border river. He thinks he owns the dirt, the air, even the bugs!

SHENZI

(Sliding down the skull smoothly, her eyes narrowing)

He owns it because he has the muscle, Banzai. But muscle gets lazy when it's well-fed. We just need a distraction. Something to draw the Pride Landers away from the lower valley.

ED

(Suddenly points a trembling paw toward a nearby ravine, letting out a sharp, low whine)

BANZAI

(Squinting through the gloom)

What is it, Ed? Did you find a rock that looks like a steak again?

SHENZI

(Crouching low, her posture instantly shifting to predatory alert)

No... look. Down in the canyon. That’s a rogue cheetah cub. Way out of her territory, and completely alone.

BANZAI

(A cruel, hungry grin spreading across his face)

Well, well, well. Look at that. Fast food. Literally.

SHENZI

(Stepping into the lead, her voice dropping to a harsh whisper)

Ed, you cut off the high ridge. Banzai, take the low flank. Let's show this little spot-cat what happens to trespassers in the Shadowlands.

How should this prequel scene unfold? Choose the next twist in the story:

- Should ***a young Mufasa or Scar (Taka)*** intervene before they can catch the cub?
- Should the ***previous generation of the Lion Guard*** arrive to protect the border?
- Should ***the cub outsmart them***, setting up the trio's classic bad luck?

Ed | The Lion King Wiki | Fandom

Ed is somewhat slow and deranged, as he chewed on his own leg after a brief scuffle with Banzai. He tends to laugh at inappropriate times, even laughing at a jo...

The Lion King Wiki | Fandom

> ***You said: the lion guard and Janja and his clan meet Shenzi banzai and ed***

the lion guard and Janja and his clan meet Shenzi banzai and ed

July 1, 2026

15 sites

Act II: The Convergence of Eras

Through a freak rift in the Outland timeline—perhaps triggered by the volatile steam vents near the volcanic caldera—the past and the present collide. Janja and his clan

are in the middle of a routine bipedal border patrol with Kion and the Lion Guard when the air shimmers, smelling heavily of ancient dust and sulfur.

From the smoke emerge three figures, blinking against the bright sunlight. Shenzi, Banzai, and Ed look exactly as they did during the reign of Scar—lean, battle-hardened, and perpetually hungry. [1, 2, 3, 4]

BANZAI

(Coughing, shaking ash from his mane)

What in the Shadowlands was that? Shenzi, the sky just turned inside out. And why is it so bright out here?

SHENZI

(Squinting, her eyes locking onto the group ahead)

I don't know, Banzai, but look what the rift dragged in. Lions. And... wait. Are those hyenas standing on two legs?

JANJA

(Stepping forward, balancing effortlessly on his hind legs, his jaw dropping)

No way... The Matriarch? Shenzi? The legends from the elephant graveyard?

CHUNGU

(Whispering loudly to Cheezi)

Cheezi! Look! It's the old-school guys! The ones from the scary bedtime stories!

ED

(Stares directly at Cheezi, tilts his head, and lets out a wild, unhinged cackle)

CHEEZI

(Instantly matches Ed's laugh, twitching his ears and chewing on his own paw) [1, 2]

BANZAI

(Staring at Janja in absolute disgust)

Hey! Kid! What are you doing to your spine? Put your front paws back on the dirt! You look like a deformed meerkat!

JANJA

(Crossing his front paws defensively, puffing out his chest)

It's called a *protective style*, old-timer! It keeps us agile and gives us a better view of the Pride Lands. Which, by the way, we protect now.

SHENZI

(Her ears pinning flat, her voice dripping with venom)

Protect? Did I just hear a hyena say he protects the lions? After everything the Pride Lands did to us? After they starved us, hunted us, and drove us into the dirt? [1]

KION

(Stepping up beside Janja, the Mark of the Guard glowing on his shoulder)

The past is over, Shenzi. Janja and his clan chose a new path. The Outlands and the Pride Lands live in peace now. [1, 2, 3, 4]

BANZAI

(Laughing bitterly, lunging forward a step)

Peace? With a lion? Shenzi, look at this kid. He's got the same smug look Mufasa used to have before he chased us into the briars. [1]

JANJA

(Stepping firmly between Banzai and Kion, standing tall)

Back off, Banzai. You guys ran with Scar. Look where that got you. He used you, starved you, and left you for dead. We built something better. We stand on our own two feet now—literally! [1, 2, 3]

SHENZI

(Looking between Janja's confident stance and Kion's ready posture, her gaze softening slightly with a mix of respect and disbelief)

You talk big for a pup, Janja. Scar was a snake, we knew that. But we did what we had to do to survive. You're telling me the lions actually respect you?

SIMBA

(Walking up from the rear, his massive bipedal frame towering over the entire group)

They do, Shenzi. Because they earned it. [1]

BANZAI

(Yelping, jumping backward into Ed's arms)

YAAAARGH! IT'S A GIANT GOLDEN BEAR!

How should this legendary meeting conclude? Let me know what you want to see next:

- Should ***Shenzi and Janja have a bipedal standoff*** to see who is the true leader?
- Should ***Ed and Cheezi find a strange connection*** and start a chaotic laughing contest?
- Should ***Simba offer the classic trio a chance at redemption*** in this new era?

Siege of Loyts | Overlord Wiki | Fandom

The demi-humans had retreated beyond the smoke on the other side of the gate. Despite the calls from her men to fall back under the protection of [Under Divine

Overlord Wiki

Shenzi, Banzai and Ed | Villains Wiki | Fandom

Without hesitation, they (Shenzi, Banzai, Ed and the entire clan) close in to leap on Scar and fiercely rip him apart to his death, eating his body up to sati...

Villains Wiki

Shenzi | The Lion King Wiki | Fandom

Shenzi, Banzai, and Ed turn on Scar for his betrayal.

The Lion King Wiki | Fandom

Scar/Synopsis | Villains Wiki | Fandom

Scar survives the fall, but as he struggles to his feet, he sees Shenzi Banzai and Ed (who had been defeated by Timon, Pumbaa, Timon's mother Ma and Uncle Max)

Villains Wiki

Ed (Eddy034's Version) | The Lion King Fanon Wiki | Fandom

Ed is the stupidest and most humorous of Shenzi's clan, and also he can't talk and can only communicate with laughter. He usually sticks his tongue out most of

The Lion King Fanon Wiki

Ed | The Lion King Wiki | Fandom

Ed is somewhat slow and deranged, as he chewed on his own leg after a brief scuffle with Banzai. He tends to laugh at inappropriate times, even laughing at a jo...

The Lion King Wiki | Fandom

Never Roar Again | Lion King/Lion Guard Wikia | Fandom

The Lion Guard (Return of the Roar) chase Janja and his clan out of the Pride Lands (the Pride Lands) and tell them to stay out. As soon as the Guard leaves...

Fandom

Kion | The Lion Guard Wiki | Fandom

Kion shows up just in time, knocking Janja off of his sister. But Janja's clan still outnumbers them, and the hyenas prepare to attack again. The Lion Guard arr...

The Lion Guard Wiki

The Lion Guard - Season 3 Rewrite : r/lionking

Janja finds out from Scar, (who stupidly mentions this in anger after Janja fails) that he attempted to sell out Shenzi, Banzai, and Ed to Simba. Janja takes hi...

Reddit

The New Lion Guard: Part 1: The Beginning by Fabian4791 on DeviantArt

Narrator: it has been quite sometime since the demise of Scar and Zira in the paws of Simba, Kiara and Kion... life in the Pride Lands became peaceful ever sinc...

DeviantArt

La Grande Bataille | Wikia La Garde du Roi Lion | Fandom

Having looked at the map, Ono then wonders if the Tree of Life could help him, too. The rest of the Lion Guard agree to travel with Kion, noting that with Scar

The Lion Guard Wiki

The Lion King/Transcript | The Lion King Wiki | Fandom

The Lion King/Transcript Shenzi Well, well, well, Banzai. Cut to a frontal shot of Simba, Nala, and Zazu staring fearfully in the direction of the hyenas. Zazu

The Lion King Wiki | Fandom

Lesson Plans

Banzai: Yes, he (Scar) had.

Washington Courts (.gov)

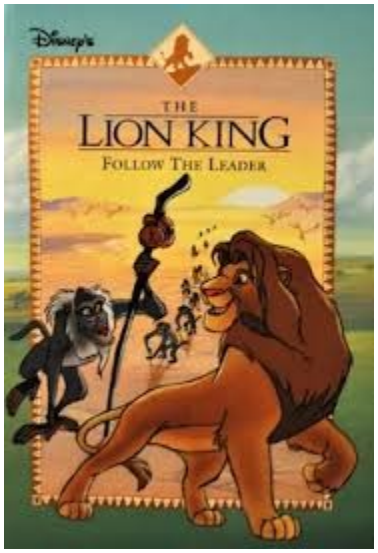
Shenzi, Banzai, and Ed | Disney Fanon Wiki | Fandom

Banzai notices the park guests and battles them, but he is quickly defeated. Soon after, the park guests must reveal Scar's lies by injuring him in front of the...

Disney Fanon Wiki

Follow the Leader | Disney Wiki | Fandom

As the troop heads out, Rafiki takes up position in the front and Simba in the rear. In the early morning, the troop makes good progress. But as the sun climbs



Disney Wiki

The Lion Guard - Season 3 Rewrite : r/lionking

Janja finds out from Scar, (who stupidly mentions this in anger after Janja fails) that he attempted to sell out Shenzi, Banzai, and Ed to Simba. Janja takes hi...

> ***You said: Should Shenzi and Janja have a bipedal standoff to see who is the true leader?***
>
> Should Shenzi and Janja have a bipedal standoff to see who is the true leader?
>
> July 1, 2026

Act III: The Bipedal Standoff

BANZAI

(Scrambling out of Ed's arms, pointing an □□□ trembling paw at Simba)

I’m telling you, Shenzi! Mufasa’s ghost has mutated! He’s standing like a baboon!

SHENZI

(Ignoring Banzai, her gaze fixed entirely on Janja)

Shut up, Banzai. Look at the pup. He thinks because he has a shiny lion friend, he runs the Outlands.

JANJA

(Smirking, rocking back on his hind legs, balancing perfectly)

I don't *think* I run it, Matriarch. I *do* run it. The Caldera is my turf. And we don't live on scraps anymore. We live on respect.

SHENZI

(Narrowing her eyes, her jaws tightening)

Respect? From a pride? Hyenas don't ask for respect, Janja. We take what we want. You think your fancy "two-leg" posture makes you a king? Let's see how stable your little style really is.

(With a sudden, explosive heave of her forelegs, Shenzi rips her front torso off the ground. She stands completely bipedal, her lean, scarred frame stretching out. She wobbles for a fraction of a second, her tail thrashing for balance, before locking her hind paws firmly into the dirt. She stares directly down into Janja's eyes, matching him height for height.)

KIARA

(Whispering to Kion)

Wow. She learned that incredibly fast.

BANZAI

(Cheering from the sidelines)

Yeah! Get him, Shenzi! Show the meerkat who owns the dirt!

JANJA

(Unfazed, crossing his front paws tightly over his chest, tilting his head)

Nice balance for an old-timer. But you’re too stiff, Shenzi. You’re standing like you're holding up a collapsing cave. You gotta slouch. Let the paws hang loose. Like this...

(Janja takes a slow, incredibly smooth, bouncing step forward—executing the perfect "hyena strut" he practiced earlier. He circles her effortlessly, completely balanced on two feet.)

Princess ivy/harumi

Ninjago harumi was always good

But evil version from earth 3

SHENZI

(Turning her entire body on her hind legs to keep eyes on him, her ears pinning back)

Don't lecture me on how to walk, pup. I walked the Shadowlands before your mother was a cub.

(Shenzi takes a heavy, deliberate step forward to match him, but she doesn't drop her center of gravity. Her back left paw slips on a piece of loose shale. She gasps, her front paws flailing wildly in the air as she tips backward.)

BANZAI AND ED

(In unison)

Whoa!

JANJA

(Darting forward on two legs, catching Shenzi firmly by her front paws before she can hit the ground)

Gotcha!

(The two clan leaders freeze, Janja holding Shenzi steady in a bizarre, bipedal dance pose. For a long moment, the only sound is the whistling of the Outland wind.)

JANJA

(Softly, easing her back onto her own two feet)

Like I said... you gotta bend the knees. Center of gravity.

SHENZI

(Blinking in shock, slowly looking down at Janja's paws holding hers, then up at his face. She relaxes her posture, dropping back down to all four paws with a heavy sigh.)

You... you really have changed things down here, haven't you? In my day, if a leader slipped, the clan would have eaten them alive. You caught me.

JANJA

(Dropping back down to four paws as well, offering a genuine, crooked smile)

We look out for our own now, Shenzi. All of us.

How should the final resolution of this timeline crossover play out? Let me know:

- Should ***Shenzi ask Janja to teach her whole clan the "bipedal strut"*** before they return to their timeline?
- Should ***Scar's spirit suddenly appear in the volcanic smoke***, forcing both generations to unite against him?
- Should ***Ed and Cheezi do something so incredibly chaotic*** that it breaks the rift and sends the trio home?

You said: Should Simba offer the classic trio a chance at redemption in this new era?

Should Simba offer the classic trio a chance at redemption in this new era?

July 1, 2026

Act IV: The Royal Offer

SIMBA

(Stepping forward, his deep voice vibrating through the canyon as he lowers himself gracefully back onto all four paws)

Shenzi. Banzai. Ed.

(The classic trio freezes. Banzai instinctively cowers behind Shenzi, while Ed stops chewing on his tail and stares up at the massive King with wide, blinking eyes.)

BANZAI

(Whispering frantically)

Here it comes. The part where the big lion flattens us into pancakes. I knew we should've stayed in the ravine.

SIMBA

(Looking down at them, his expression soft, devoid of the anger from his youth)

I remember the darkness Scar brought to the Pride Lands. And I remember the choices you made under his shadow. But looking at Janja today, I see that no one is locked into their past forever.

SHENZI

(Her voice cautious, guarding her pride)

What are you saying, Simba? You want us to say sorry for things we did a lifetime ago? We were starving.

SIMBA

The Circle of Life has room for everyone who respects it. Janja's clan found their place here. If this rift keeps you in our time... I am offering you the same chance. A home in the Outlands, plenty of food, and peace with the Pride Lands.

BANZAI

(Blinking in absolute disbelief, looking at Shenzi)

Wait... plenty of food? Like... actual meat? Not rocks or dry bugs?

JANJA

(Grinning, stepping up next to Simba)

Real food, Banzai. No more eating dirt. But it means no hunting the herds, and no sneaking across the border to cause trouble. We work *with* the Lion Guard now.

SHENZI

(Staring at Simba's outstretched paw, then looking back at Janja and her own ragged, tired trio. Her tough exterior completely cracks.)

A lifetime of running... of fighting for every single bone. We never thought there was another way.

ED

(Nods with a rare, quiet seriousness, letting out a soft, gentle whine of agreement)

SHENZI

(Looking back up at Simba, a genuine look of respect in her eyes)

If the pup can learn to stand on two legs and protect the peace... I suppose three old hyenas can learn to live in it. We accept, Your Highness.

How should we wrap up this grand crossover finale? Let me know your thoughts:

- Show ***Janja, Shenzi, and Simba all doing a massive bipedal victory strut*** together to celebrate the new peace.
- Have ***Kion officially welcome them*** by showing them their new, lush territory in the Outlands.
- Let me know if you want to ***end the story here*** with a heartwarming, final fade-out!

You said: madoa comforts wema and Tunu lion of the outlands epilogue fanfic

madoa comforts wema and Tunu lion of the outlands epilogue fanfic

July 2, 2026

Act V: A Quiet Corner of the Caldera

The grand celebrations of the alliance and the strange timeline crossover finally wind down. As the blazing sun dips below the jagged peaks of the Outlands, painting the sulfurous sky in deep shades of violet and amber, the heavy footsteps of the royal family fade into the distance.

Near the edge of the cooling volcanic vents, Wema and Tunu sit huddled together on a flat rock. The emotional weight of the day—watching Janja break down in shame, singing their hearts out to comfort him, and witnessing the intense arrival of the ancient hyenas—has finally caught up to the young pups. Their large ears droop low, and

Wema hides her snout against Tunu's shoulder, shivering slightly as the chill of the desert night sets in.

MADOA

(Stepping softly out from the shadows of the rocks, her voice gentle and warm)

Hey, little ones. Why the long faces? The whole valley is celebrating. Janja and Simba just shook paws on two legs! I thought you'd be up there trying to copy the King's giant bear walk.

WEMA

(Looking up, her eyes glossy with unshed tears)

Madoa... we were just... we were scared. When Janja started talking about the old days, he looked so sad. Like he didn't belong with us anymore.

TUNU

(Nodding, a small whine escaping his throat)

Yeah. And those scary old hyenas from the stories—Shenzi and Banzai—they looked so hungry and angry. Is the past always going to come back to hunt us, Madoa? Will Janja go back to being bad?

MADOA

(Nuzzling both pups gently, letting them lean into her soft fur)

Oh, you sweet pups. Come here. Listen to me. The past doesn't have claws unless you give them to it.

WEMA

(Sniffing, burying her face in Madoa's mane)

But Janja said he left scars. He said he didn't deserve to hold his head high.

MADOA

(Sighing softly, looking out over the glowing embers of the valley)

Janja did things he isn't proud of. We all made mistakes when Scar's shadow hung over these lands. We were desperate, and we were taught that fighting was the only way to survive. But do you know why Janja is a real leader now?

TUNU

(Blinking up at her)

Because of his cool protective style?

MADOA

(Chuckling warmly, shaking her head)

No, Tunu. It's because he had the courage to look at those scars and say, *"I want to be better."* He didn't run away from his mistakes. He stayed, he apologized to Kion, and

he chose to protect you two. You sang it yourselves today—he is the leader he chose to be.

WEMA

(Wiping her nose with a paw, her ears perking up slightly)

So... he won't leave us?

MADOA

(Smiling fiercely, squeezing them tight)

Never. Janja loves this clan too much. And seeing you two stand up for him today? That gave him more strength than any lion's roar ever could. You reminded him of who he is right now. You are the future of the Outlands, and that future is bright.

(From the ridge above, a familiar, raspy chuckle echoes through the rocks. Janja stands there, silhouetted against the rising moon—completely bipedal, his front paws resting confidently on his hips with his signature smirk.)

JANJA

Hey! You three gonna cuddle all night, or are you gonna join the victory feast? Chungu found a stash of fresh gazelle that Simba sent over, and Cheezi is currently trying to teach Shenzi how to eat a stick. It’s a total circus up there.

TUNU AND WEMA

(In unison, their eyes lighting up as they scramble off the rock)

Janja!

(The two pups sprint up the trail on all fours, completely energized, before popping up onto their hind legs right next to Janja, mimicking his slouching strut perfectly.)

MADOA

(Walking slowly behind them, her heart full as she watches the trio bounce-drag their way back toward the firelight)

Yeah. We're going to be just fine.

How would you like to wrap up this emotional epilogue? If you're ready, let me know if you would like to:

- ***End the story here*** with a beautiful, final sunset fade-out on the unified Outlands.
- Write a final comedic scene of ***Cheezi and Ed having a laughing contest*** at the feast.
- Explore what ***Shenzi and Jasiri talk about*** as they discuss leading the new clan together.

You said: Should Shenzi ask Janja to teach her whole clan the "bipedal strut"

Should Shenzi ask Janja to teach her whole clan the "bipedal strut"

July 5, 2026

1 site

Act VI: The Masterclass of the Strut

SHENZI

(Walking up to the feast, her eyes locked on Janja, Wema, and Tunu as they bounce-drag their way past the fire)

Alright, pup. I've been watching you move. It's ridiculous. It's unnatural. It looks like you've got a thorn stuck in your hip.

JANJA

(Dropping his front paws onto his hips, smirking)

It's called *swagger*, Matriarch. Don't knock it until you've tried it. [1]

SHENZI

(Sighing, looking back at Banzai, who is currently trying to balance on his hind legs and immediately falling flat on his muzzle)

Yeah, well... my boys back there have the grace of a rolling boulder. If we're going to live in this new era of peace and look like "elite protectors," we can't be tripping over our own paws. Teach us. Teach the whole clan.

JANJA

(His eyes lighting up, a massive grin spreading across his face)

Oh, you've come to the right place. Clan! Gather 'round! We've got some old-school students ready for the academy!

(Instantly, Cheezi, Chungu, and the rest of Janja's crew form a straight line. Shenzi, Banzai, and a very confused Ed line up opposite them. Even Jasiri and Madoa step closer to watch the spectacle.)

JANJA

(Pacing like a drill sergeant, entirely bipedal)

Rule number one of the Bipedal Protective Style: Forget everything your mother taught you about posture. Arching your back? Wrong. Holding your head high? Mistake. You gotta *slouch*. Show 'em, Chungu!

CHUNGU

(Pops up on his hind legs, dropping his shoulders forward and letting his jaw hang loose)

Like a tired wildebeest, boss!

JANJA

(Nodding)

Exactly. Now, Banzai, stand up. Drop the shoulders.

BANZAI

(Grumbling, heaving himself onto his back paws, wobbling violently)

This is humiliating. If Scar could see me now—

JANJA

(Smacking Banzai's shoulder gently with a front paw)

Scar’s not here, and your knees are locked! Bend 'em! Drop the center of gravity!

(Banzai bends his knees, slouching forward. Suddenly, his balance stabilizes. He blinks in surprise, taking a tentative step.)

BANZAI

Hey... wait a minute. Shenzi, look! I’m doing it! I’m a biped!

SHENZI

(Heaving herself up, dropping into the perfect slouch, her tail swishing for counter-balance)

Alright, pup. We've got the posture. Now what's the rhythm?

JANJA, WEMA, AND TUNU

(In perfect unison, starting the motion)

Step... bounce... drag the heel! Step... bounce... drag the heel!

(Within minutes, the entire clearing is a chaotic, beautiful mess. Dozens of hyenas from two different generations are upright, bouncing and dragging their heels around the glowing volcanic vents. Ed takes to it instantly, executing a chaotic, high-speed bipedal spin that sends Cheezi into a fit of matching laughter.)

SIMBA

(Watching from the high ridge with Nala, a massive smile on his face)

You know, Nala... I never thought I'd see the day the Outlands looked like a dance floor.

NALA

(Leaning against him, laughing softly)

Just promise me you won't try to join them tonight, Simba. My ribs still hurt from laughing earlier.

We have reached a beautiful, complete arc for this fanfic! If you're happy with how this turned out, let me know if you would like to ***end the story here*** with a classic, heartwarming fade-out, or if you want to explore any ***other character interactions*** from *The Lion Guard*!

Hyena Headcanons/Theories □ : r/lionking

Shenzi and Bonzai/Ed (idc which one both works fine) Had a kid during Scar's rule, his name was Janja (yes, that janja). Since Shenzi was a matriarch, Janja was...

Reddit

> ***You said: Explore what Shenzi and Jasiri talk about as they discuss leading the new clan together***
>
> Explore what Shenzi and Jasiri talk about as they discuss leading the new clan together
>
> July 5, 2026

3 sites

Act VII: Two Matriarchs, One Future

Away from the chaotic rhythm of the bipedal dancing, the two generation-defining matriarchs step into the quiet, starlit outskirts of the Caldera. Jasiri watches the younger pups with a protective smile, her sleek fur shimmering under the moonlight. Shenzi stands beside her on all fours, looking older, heavily scarred, and deeply contemplative as she observes this strange new world.

Bandit’s belt dark AUs lion king and lion guard

SHENZI

(Breaking the silence, her voice raspy but quiet)

You handle them well. The pups, the boys... even Janja listens to you, whether he wants to admit it or not. You’ve got a real clan here, Jasiri.

JASIRI

(Turning her head, her purple eyes warm)

It wasn't always like this, Shenzi. For a long time, we were divided. Janja thought the only way to survive was to take everything by force, just like your clan did under Scar. It took a lot of hurt before we realized we’re stronger together. [1, 2]

SHENZI

(Sighing, a bitter edge to her tone)

We didn't have a choice with Scar. It was follow him, or starve in the dirt. But looking at your clan... you aren't starving. You’re fat, you’re happy, and you’re laughing because you want to, not because you’re losing your minds from hunger. I never imagined a hyena could live like this.

JASIRI

(Stepping closer, resting a reassuring paw near Shenzi's)

You did what you had to do to keep your family alive in a dark time. No one here blames you for surviving. But the darkness is gone now. Under the Circle of Life, there is enough for all of us, as long as we respect the balance.

SHENZI

(Looking back toward the fire, where Banzai and Chungu are currently sharing a laugh)

It’s going to be a strange transition, leading our clans as one. My guys are used to fighting for every single scrap. They’re defensive. They’re angry. [1]

JASIRI

(Smiling confidently)

Then we’ll teach them. Your clan brings strength, resilience, and history. My clan brings peace and cooperation. Together, we aren't just a pack of scavengers anymore, Shenzi. We are the protectors of the Outlands.

SHENZI

(A slow, genuine smile breaking across her hardened face, her ears rising)

"Protectors." I think I like the sound of that. Alright, Jasiri. Let's show these lions what happens when two generations of matriarchs stand together.

We have reached a beautiful, complete conclusion to this multi-era crossover! To help wrap things up or explore further, let me know if you would like to:

Bluey onesies 2022 versions and bluey moving on 2021 au yes yes meeting the 2022 versions of themselves yes bluey series 3 part 2 2022 streaming and blueytv

- ***End the story here*** with a final, heartwarming fade-out on the unified clans.
- Propose a ***new plot point*** or character entry for a brand-new scene.
- Adjust any ***specific dialogue*** to better match your vision!

SPECIES

Human

GENDER

Female

AFFILIATION

Royal Family of Ninjago(formerly)

Sons of Garmadon (formerly)

Crystal Army (formerly)

HOMEWORLD/ HOMELAND

Ninjago

OCCUPATION

Princess of Ninjago (formerly)

Leader of the Sons of Garmadon (formerly)

Second-in-command of the Crystal Army (formerly)

Leader of the Council of the Crystal King (formerly)

WEAPON OF CHOICE

Dagger

Oni Mask of Hatred (formerly)

Twin Katanas

Crystal katana

ELEMENT

Darkness (formerly)

STATUS

Alive[1] (resurrected)

FAMILY

Unnamed (father; deceased)

Unnamed (mother; deceased)

Unnamed (adoptive father; deceased)

Unnamed (adoptive mother; deceased)

FIRST APPEARANCE

"The Mask of Deception"

70643 Temple of Resurrection

LATEST APPEARANCE

"Masked Evil"

71861 The Old Town

VOICED BY

Britt McKillip

Andrew Francis (as the KabukiMask)

LESS

Overview | Relationships | Gallery

My name is Harumi, the Jade Princess. You may think you know my story, but you don't. As a child, the ninja were my heroes. Until the day the Great Devourer attacked Ninjago. Although my parentsfound a way to save me, they couldn't save themselves. The ninja, my beloved heroes, had failed me. Failed us all. I was adopted by the Emperor and Empress of Ninjago, making me a princess. But becoming royalty couldn't fill the emptiness in my heart. So I began plotting my revenge.

HARUMI

Harumi (nicknamed **Rumi**) is the former princess of Ninjago and the founder of the Sons of Garmadonas the **Quiet One**. After losing her parents during the rampage of the Great Devourer, Harumi was adopted by the Emperor and Empress of Ninjagoand became the **Jade Princess**. For years, she sought vengeance against the ninja for allowing her parents' deaths, and she admired Lord Garmadon, who killed the Great Devourer himself.

The ninja begin to safeguard Harumi and the Royal Palace when the Sons of Garmadon rise to prominence. After the palace is destroyed and her

adoptive parents are killed, Harumi joins the ninja and is protected by Lloyd, who she fakes a close relationship with. After sabotaging the ninja's plans, she and the Sons of Garmadon seize the three Oni Masks and use them to resurrect Garmadon as a soulless incarnation of his former self. After the ritual supposedly fails, Harumi is arrested, but her act was successful and Garmadon is revived. The dark lord frees her and her allies from prison. She watches as Garmadon fights and defeats Lloyd in Kryptarium Prison, after which he creates the Colossus. Harumi pursues Lloyd and a young Wu, who is presumably killed with the original ninja after *Destiny's Bounty* is destroyed.

Harumi serves Garmadon as he rules Ninjago, often running missions for him to help hunt down Lloyd's Resistance. When a mental battle for the Colossus breaks out between Skylor and Garmadon, Harumi saves a child and his family from suffering the same fate as hers. Harumi perishes when the Colossus strikes the building she's in, causing it to collapse. Before she can pass onto the Departed Realm, Harumi finds herself in a void with the Overlord, who coerces her to help his cause in exchange for her revival. She reluctantly agrees, and is resurrected - unbeknownst to Garmadon and the ninja.

As the herald of the Overlord, Harumi establishes the Crystal Temple as a base of operations, and begins building an army out of Vengestone. Under the secret identity of the **Kabuki Mask**, she assembles and commands a council of the ninja's past enemies, including Pythor, Aspheera, Vangelis, The Mechanic, and Mister F. After Lloyd is captured by the council, Harumi oversees the Overlord's rebirth as the Crystal King, and leads his generals as they wage war in Ninjago City.

For much of the final battle, Harumi remains atop the Overlord's floating temple, and witnesses his battle against Lloyd and Garmadon. After learning the Overlord was responsible for corrupting The Great Devourer and indirectly causing the deaths of her parents, Harumi betrays him and sides with the ninja. After the Overlord and his armies were defeated, Harumi makes amends with Lloyd, and later helps with rebuilding the Monastery of Spinjitzu.

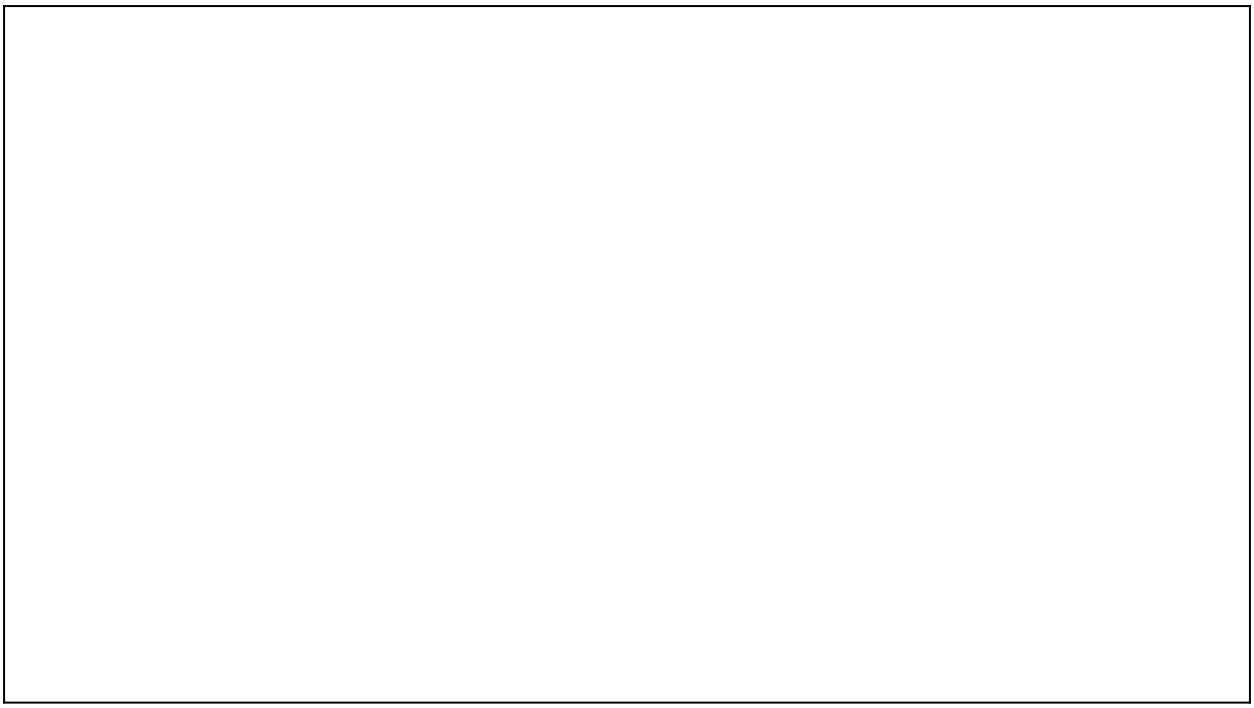
ADVERTISEMENT

History

ADVERTISEMENT

Early life

Harukai/ prince wittebane/hush/batman the silenced Batman under the red hood Harumi/Princess Ivy from the dark alternate trials against the evil/trials against humanity was once a happy young girl in Ninjago Cityand a fan of the ninja. One day, Harumi was playing with her ninja action figures as the Great Devourer's rampage through Ninjago City began. Seeing too many people by the elevator, she and her parentstried the stairwell, only to discover it was gone.



Harumi losing her parents.

As the people who managed to get in the elevator prepared to leave, Harumi's father convinced them to take Harumi while her mother held her hand and promised they would meet her outside to soothe her before the elevator's doors closed, allowing Harumi to get out of the building in time with only a broken arm and a damaged family photo of her with her parents. She was traumatically quiet after that and ignored any questions the paramedics asked her, leading the female paramedic to call her "the Quiet One".[2]

Sometime after her parents died, she was adopted by the Royal Family and became the princess of Ninjago, shortly growing up with all the riches, splendor, and privileges of royalty in Ninjago. As she grew up, Harumi had to spend most of her time in the palace, which gave her time to explore it and make alterations. Although the Emperor and Empress loved her as if she was their child, she never saw them as her parents, mostly due to a very strict

education for her, and sought to overthrow them in time, but kept this hidden behind a loving façade.

She was inspired to hear that Lord Garmadon was the one who defeated the Great Devourer and saved Ninjago. Harumi harbored great disdain for the ninja for failing the city.

Garmadon Rulez!

Shortly after Harumi was adopted the new family was interviewed by Gayle Gossip, who strongly believed that Harumi was going to be very happy with her new family. The Emperor and Empress declared their intentions of turning Harumi into a princess the citizens of Ninjago would be proud of while Harumi refused to talk and just frowned at the camera. Her adoptive parents paid no mind to their daughter's bad mood and believed that Harumi "would regain her voice soon" once she realized how lucky she was to be chosen by them as their daughter and heir to the throne.

Despite now being a princess and being supplied with lots of material goods like a big bedroom and lots of toys, Harumi greatly despised her life at the palace, especially the Emperor and Empress, and the strict education they enforced on her. Her relationship with her adoptive parents was a weak one as they, according to Harumi, were very stern, distant, and not very affectionate unlike her birth parents, which led to her becoming bitter and emotionally unstable. The Royal Family's bodyguard Hutchins appeared to care about Harumi and was the only one who knew about Harumi being extremely unhappy with her life. Hutchins looked out for her and did things like reminding her to brush her teeth and giving her a journal so that she could write about her feelings, believing that it might help her feel better. He also used to sing the "Spider's in the House" lullaby for her when she was a child and couldn't sleep, although Harumi found the song to be creepy.

Unfortunately, his efforts to help Harumi proved to be fruitless and Harumi grew to hate him as well. Harumi followed his advice and wrote about her feelings in her journal and how much she hated her new family, Hutchins, the ninja, and the "evil palace" she lived in. She missed her former life, her normal clothes, her old bedroom with a crack on the wall, and especially her parents, whom she affectionately referred to as "Mama" and "Papa" and kept her family photo within her journal. While she swore she would always love her birth parents, she also wished Lord Garmadon had adopted her.

After Garmadon was purged of his evil, Harumi lost all respect and admiration she felt for him after watching as he bowed before the Emperor and was pardoned in a public ceremony, considering him weak and musing that it would have been better if he had died. That night she got rid of everything she owned that reminded her of him and abandoned her fanaticism of him. After that, Harumi focused on becoming the proper princess she was expected to be. She became a model student, behaving perfectly and only speaking when spoken to as taught to her by the Empress, but she still found no happiness in being the princess of Ninjago.

As Harumi grew into adolescence, she found a way to escape the palace through the garden and, using casual clothes she stole from the cleaning staff to avoid being recognized, she made a few shorts trips and sometimes had dinner at restaurants, always returning home before the gardener arrived at sunrise. She was caught by a gardener one night when she returned to the palace but she managed to bribe him with some food she had brought back with her.

Harumi's obsession with Garmadon was reignited when she was drawn to the Oni Mask of Deceptionand heard Garmadon calling her. This inspired her to

find a way to revive him, specifically his evil side, and have him become the new ruler of Ninjago. Harumi studied the ninja, Wu, Garmadon, and the Oni during her escapades, as well as having Hutchins take her to the Ancient Library of Domu, claiming she wanted to know more about the history of Ninjago. She eventually managed to recruit enough criminals for her mission, founding the organization "Sons of Garmadon" and took on the childhood alias of the "Quiet One" as their leader. It is implied that as time passed, Hutchins may have grown suspicious of what Harumi was plotting.

She once visited Mystake at her shop and asked her to tell her about the legend of the Oni and the Dragon by lying about needing the information for a school assignment, and she told Harumi about the legend with the same tea she used to tell Lloyd and Jay before asking her nicely to leave. At the library, she found a map that would take her to the Mask of Hatred and once the Sons of Garmadon captured Misako and the infant Wu, she stole the map and wrapped it around Wu so that when the Sons of Garmadon found the mask, they could make Wu take the mask so they could have the mask as only an Oni can take it from the purple bonfire.

Sons of Garmadon

The Mask of Deception

Harumi with her adoptive parents.

Harumi is present with her adoptive parents, the Emperor and Empress of Ninjago, as they greet Ninjago before the presumed attack goes off and she is saved by Lloyd. It turns out it was simply nothing; just some firecrackers

going off. However, the family is grateful for the rescue and invites the ninja to stay in the Palace.

That night, she formally meets the ninja and details her thoughts of them with them accepting her praise, and Harumi even delights a former cynical Nya when she voices that she wanted to be like her after she became a great ninja.

Lloyd spying on Harumi

The Emperor and Empress soon speak to them and reveal that Harumi was adopted and taken in by them, though they insist they are family.

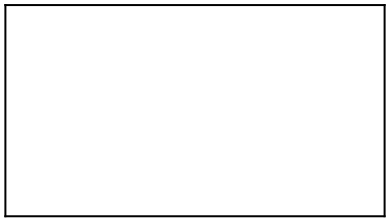
Harumi was later removing her makeup, after she realized that Lloyd was spying on her, she pretended to be scared shortly before Lloyd left the room embarrassed.

The Jade Princess

Lloyd talking to Harumi.

Later on, Harumi sneaks out of her room but she is spotted by Lloyd, who mistakes her as a kidnapper due to her hoodie and bag. However, after capturing her, he learns the truth and is told by an amused Harumi that sometimes she sneaks out to give food to those less fortunate. She offers him the chance to join her and he accepts, with Harumi disguising him to avoid suspicion. The two go into the night and talk on the bridge, bonding

over how they didn't choose the mantles that were entrusted upon them, with Harumi telling him to call her "Rumi." Lloyd and Harumi were then discovered by Hutchins who then brings her back to the palace.

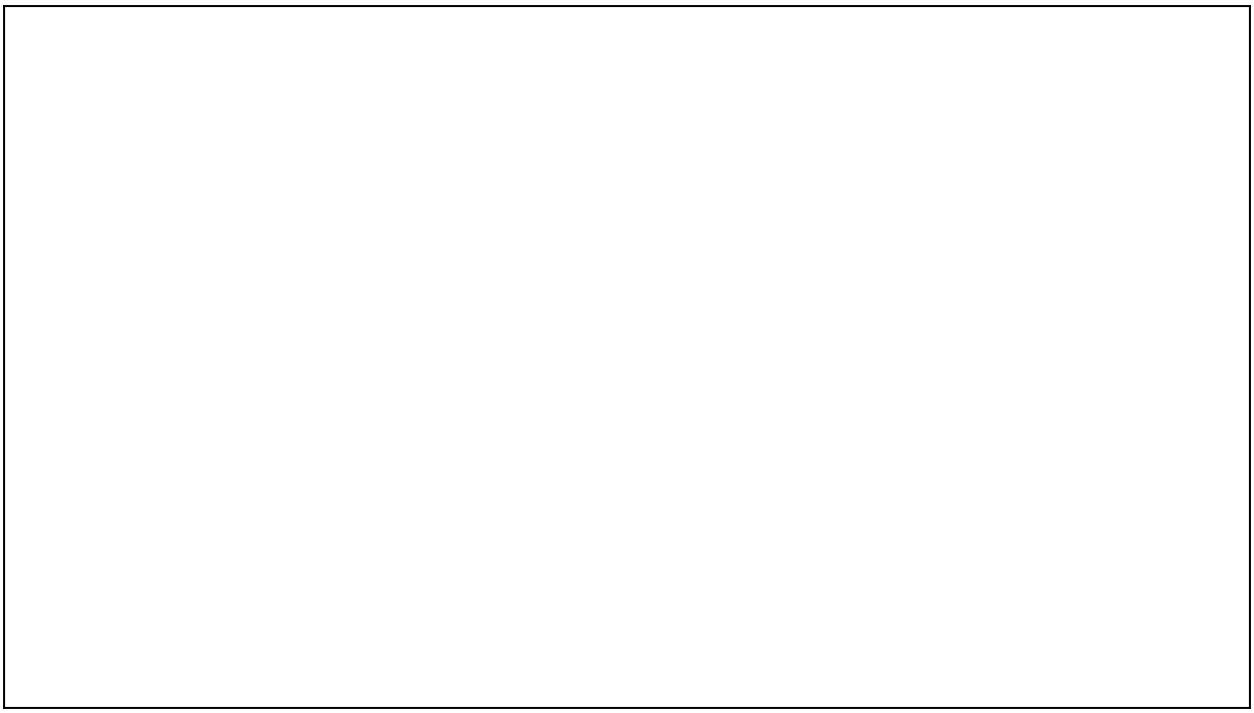


Lloyd and Harumi facing Ultra Violet

The next morning, Harumi is then told off by her adoptive parents for sneaking out. She apologizes and runs away, crying. During the attack on the Palace, she is trapped under burning rumble in her bedroom, but she is saved by Zane. Harumi escapes the burning Palace with Lloyd and the Mask of Deception moments before it explodes. She and Lloyd are then chased by Ultra Violet and her thugs, and while Ultra Violet manages to get the Mask of Deception, she and Lloyd escape on the *Destiny's Bounty*.

When Harumi is told by Nya that her adoptive parents and Hutchins were killed in the Palace fire, she seems devastated, saying, "Once again, I am . . . alone." Lloyd invites Harumi to stay with him and the ninja, and Kai and Lloyd promise her that they will find out who was responsible for the deaths of her adoptive parents and Hutchins.

The Oni and the Dragon

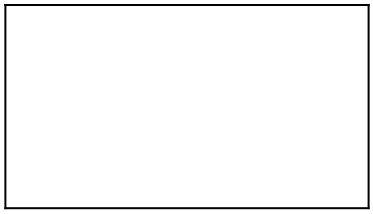


Nya and Harumi

Harumi adjusts to life on the *Destiny's Bounty*. While on the *Bounty*, she takes out a photograph of her as a child with her deceased biological parents, as well as one with the Royal family.

Later, the ninja goes out to chase Mr. E. She tries to go with them but is told by Lloyd and Nya to stay on the *Bounty* with P.I.X.A.L. to keep her from getting captured by the Sons of Garmadon. She is startled when she finds out that the Sons of Garmadon are trying to bring back Garmadon. Her emotions make her not a suspect of being the Quiet One.

Snake Jaguar



Nya discovering the "Quiet One"

Harumi is helping Nya build a bike for Zane until she hands Nya the wrong tool; then she goes to make herself useful.

Offscreen, she then informs Ultra Violet that Zane is going undercover as Snake Jaguar.

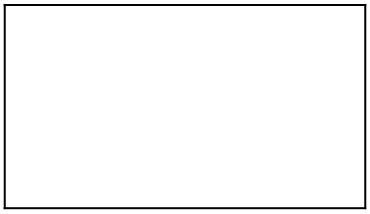
She can be seen upstairs on the *Bounty* next to Nya when she is talking to Zane before it shows up over him and Harumi pushes the bike out for Zane to get on.

Dead Man's Squall

Harumi singing a song to the baby

Harumi received an encrypted transmission saying "The trap has been set" from Mr. E.

Harumi is seen standing over Zane with the rest of the ninja while he is being repaired. Later on, she is seen singing a lullaby to the baby, which helps him fall asleep. Shortly after, she almost kisses Lloyd but he gets nervous and backs away before running off.

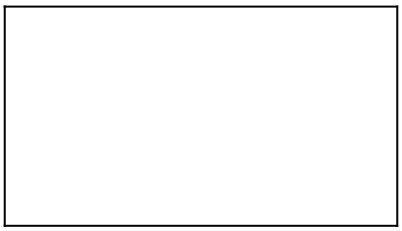


Harumi saving Lloyd

Later on, she is seen defending the ship with the ninja from the Quiet One, from the corrupted Samurai X, who is revealed to be P.I.X.A.L., until she gets captured by the Quiet One. Lloyd tries to save her, but both end up falling out of the sky. They both survive the fall and land on an island. She is later seen using the map to the Mask of Hatred as a sling for Lloyd’s arm, as he had been injured in the fall. She and Lloyd, having been separated from the

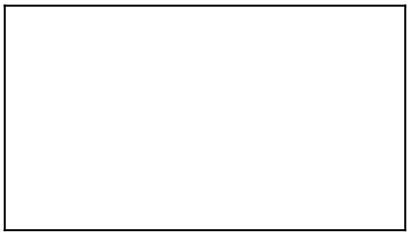
rest of the ninja, then start off to find the hiding place of the Oni Mask of Hatred.

The Quiet One



Harumi kissing Lloyd

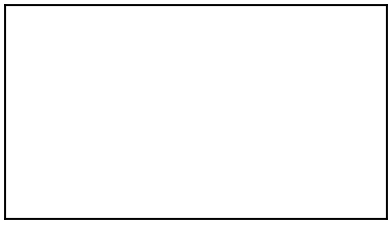
Harumi is seen to be running away from the green monster and hides with Lloyd. Then, they came out of their hiding spot and Harumi fixes Lloyd's map arm cast causing him to smile while blushing then they headed to Strangler's Path. Later on, she chased a Strangle Weed that pulled Lloyd towards a tree and she threw Lloyd's sword at it. She ran towards Lloyd and she got asked by him about how did she throw a sword like that. She answered, "I got lucky, I guess." She immediately kisses Lloyd on his cheek to make him stop asking her serious questions. Lloyd gives Harumi back his sword and she gives him the map to the Oni Mask of Hatred to look at normally since the attack had fixed Lloyd's arm.



Lloyd and Harumi discussing

Harumi asks Lloyd about his arm as they continued to walk. She continues to cut some vines that get in their way until she discovered a Sons of Garmadon insignia on an abandoned boat. Harumi and Lloyd enter the boat and find another map. Harumi starts the boat's engine and becomes in charge of steering.

After a while, Lloyd and Harumi talk about how the greatest villain was the one that got away before they realize that there's something in the shallow water. She starts the engine again at full speed and she steers the boat, to get away from the creature. The creature got away and the boat got pulled by the Black River current. Lloyd ordered Harumi to steer back but she couldn't. Then both of them fell in the water.

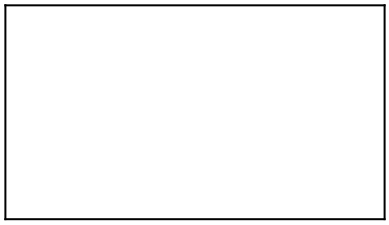


Harumi wickedly smiling at an unnoticing Lloyd

However, they managed to swim to land, where Lloyd finds the Oni Temple holding the Mask of Hatred. Harumi smiled evilly to herself as Lloyd prepared to go inside the temple.

Game of Masks

Harumi experiences flashbacks of the day she lost her biological parents before going on with Lloyd into the Oni Temple to find the Mask of Hatred, deliberately setting off a trap before finding the mask.



Harumi reveals her true nature

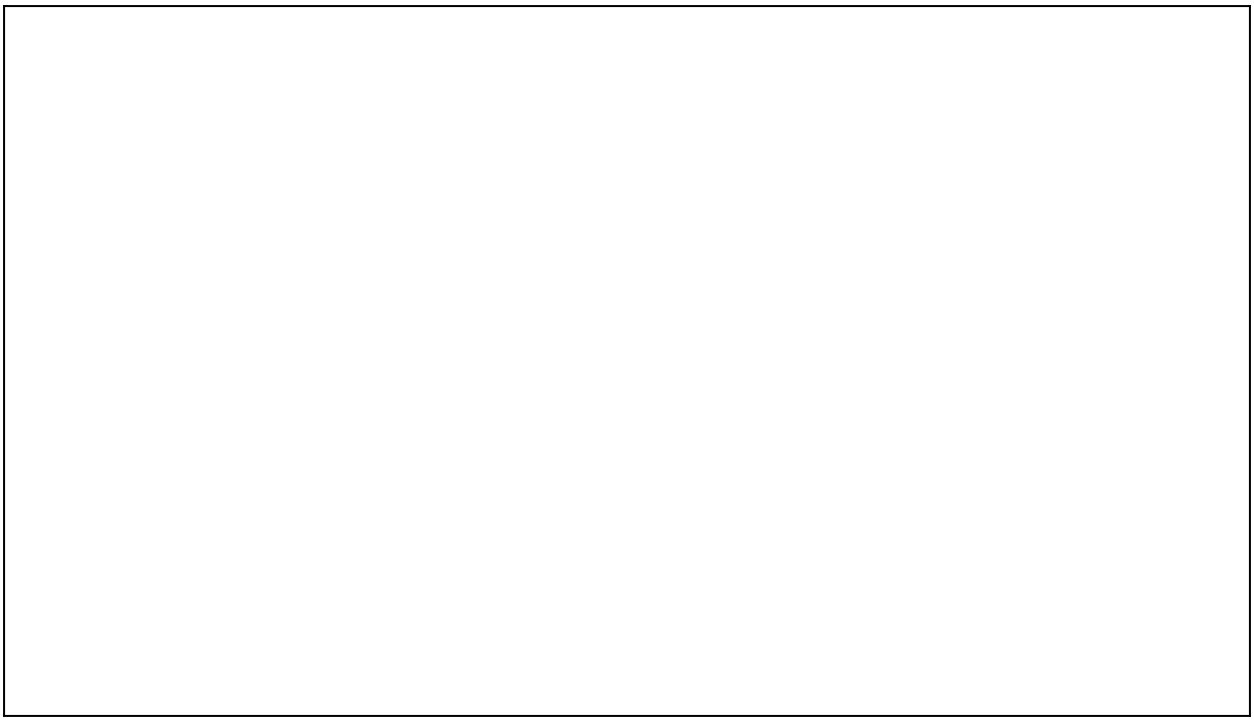
Since she was unable to grab it, Harumi let it slip that she knows only someone with Oni blood can grab it, resulting in Lloyd realizing that she is The Quiet One. She tries to preserve the lie by flirting with Lloyd, but he no longer believes her and she drops the act. She tells Lloyd her reason for resurrecting Lord Garmadon, calling him the real hero as he destroyed the

Great Devourer, mocking the ninja for their failed efforts while also revealing to him that his uncle Wu was the baby before grabbing the mask, putting it on, and turning gray.

Harumi wearing the Mask of Hatred

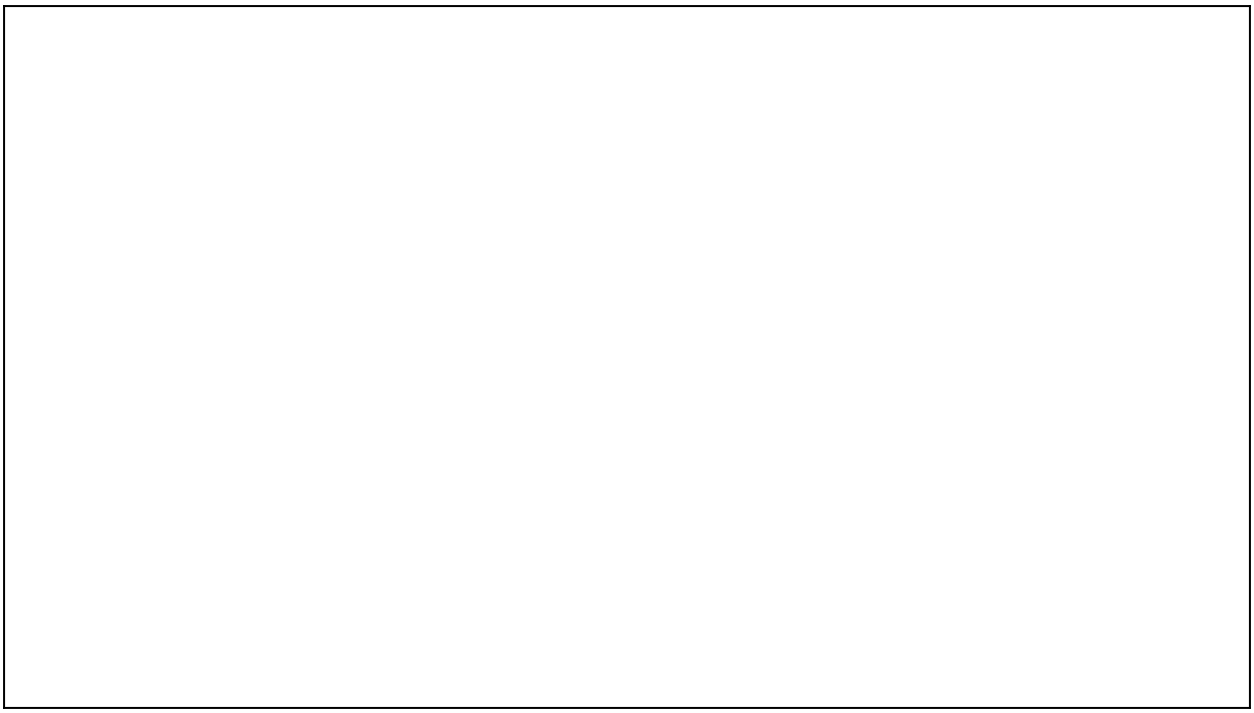
After leaving Lloyd trapped in the chamber, she sets off another trap, resulting in the temple flooding in an attempt to drown Lloyd. She later reunited with her comrades and they try to escape when the ninja surrounds them and she taunts them over their previous belief in her before Lloyd was able to get out the cave and the creature from before attacks them. Realizing the ninja are distracted, the Sons of Garmadon use this to their advantage to take the *Destiny's Bounty* and flee with the masks. Lloyd comes to stop them but is captured.

Dread on Arrival



Harumi mocks a heartbroken Lloyd.

Beginning with this episode, Harumi ditches her green outfit and replaces it with more menacing clothes, she is now wearing black clothing, has red face paint, and she has her hair undone. She then personally escorts Lloyd to the Temple of Resurrection, which was underneath the palace. There, she reveals to the Green Ninja she had also kidnapped his mother, Misako, who found Toddler Wu, and uses her as her insurance that the ninja should come. After Lloyd tells her to release his mother as their conflict was just between them, Harumi coldly tells him there was never anything between them and has the heartbroken Lloyd and Misako locked in counter cells where, if one cell is raised, the other is lowered into the sea, where piranhas will eat them. Before starting the ceremony to resurrect Lord Garmadon, she takes one strand of each of their hair, as the spell requires hair from the brother (which she already had, from baby Wu), the wife, and the son.



The ninja stop the ritual.

As she conjures the resurrection spell, she continuously calls out to Garmadon through the now-opened portal. However, the ninja interfere and free Lloyd and Misako. Together, they use Spinjitzu to knock her down, throwing off her concentration for the spell. The portal closes, angering Harumi, who collapses on the pedestal she had been using for the spell. The police arrive and arrest all the members of the Sons of Garmadon as a dazed Harumi regains consciousness before she is personally arrested by Simon and Tommy. She screams in anger at her defeat as she is taken from the temple.

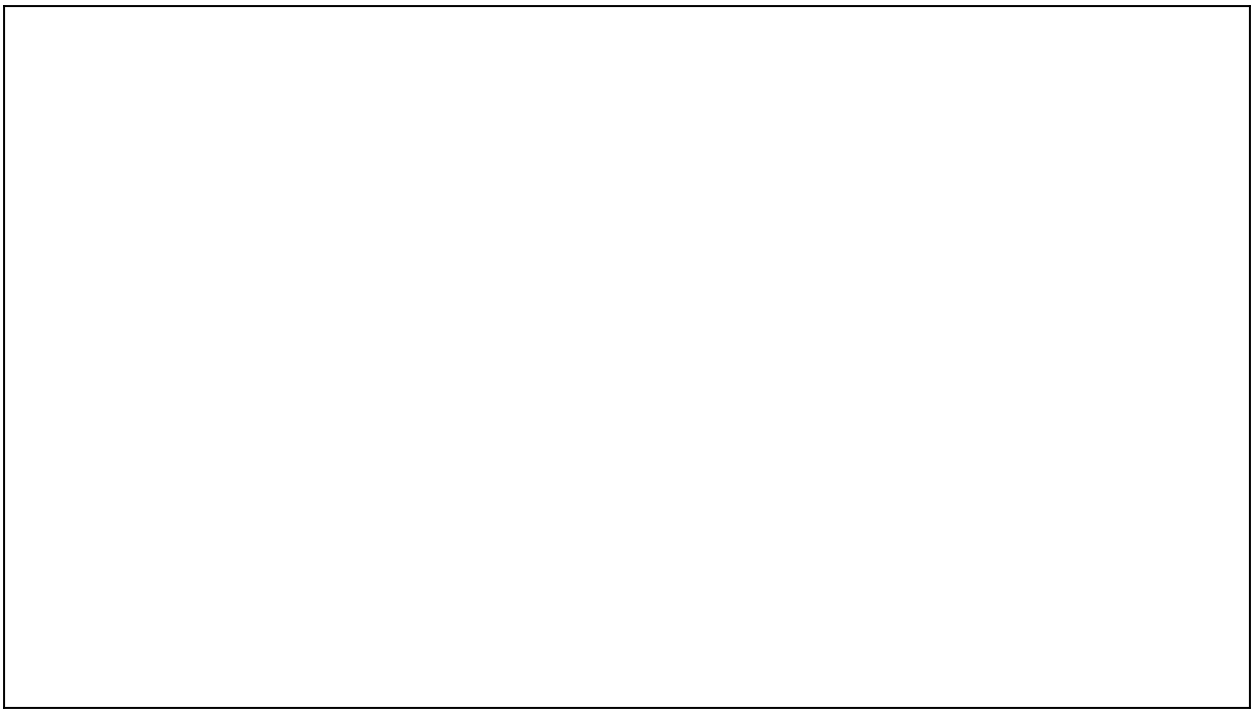
Defeated and arrested, Harumi lunges at Lloyd in anger.

As she was put in the back of a transport van, Lloyd stops a cop from closing the back doors so that he could speak with her. Harumi tries to manipulate Lloyd again, telling him that he was right and that this wasn't her. Enlightened by her betrayal, Lloyd immediately sees through the lie, and tells her to stop, using her previous words about the Quiet One against her: "It looks like you were wrong. You weren't the one that got away." Enraged, she attempts to lunge at him, but now cold to her, Lloyd closes the doors on her face. Lloyd watches as she is driven away towards the police station while her forces are sent to Kryptarium Prison.

True Potential

Garmadon freeing Harumi

Harumi sits in an interrogation room, refusing to speak or even give out any information, watched by Simon and the Police Commissioner before a resurrected Garmadon arrives, in a stolen garbage truck, and takes down the officers and frees her. Happy to meet her idol, Harumi teams up with him, and they later go to Kryptarium to break out her forces and take it over, kicking Noble out.



Harumi proclaiming Garmadon as "Emperor"

Upon being told by Luke of Lloyd's arrival, she decided to show the whole fight between him and Garmadon across Ninjago. After Garmadon defeats Lloyd, Harumi tells Garmadon to let Lloyd live so he could see his reign. She then orders her forces to head to Ninjago at dawn, to proclaim Garmadon as the new Emperor of Ninjago.

Big Trouble, Little Ninjago

Harumi and Garmadon

Harumi was present when Garmadon created Colossus and scared off a lone villager, who wanted to fight before they head to Ninjago and attack. She evens let's the civilians live if they kneel before Garmadon, which some reluctantly do so. Harumi later confronted Lloyd as he was fleeing with Wu in

his arms and puts on the Mask of Hatred, once more to pursue him. When they came up to a dead-end, she had offered the powerless Lloyd a position in the Sons of Garmadon, but he refuses and jumps off the roof, onto the roof of a tram before she soon confronts him on it.

Harumi forces Lloyd to watch the "demise" of his friends.

She later stopped Lloyd from jumping onto the *Destiny's Bounty* but failed to stop Wu before the Colossus caught hold of the ship. She proclaimed it was the end and forced him to watch as the ship was destroyed and incorrectly assumed Kai, Jay, Zane, Cole, and Wu are dead as a tearful Lloyd looks at the remains of the Bounty in disbelief, unaware that they had used the Traveler's Tea beforehand Harumi was about to resume fighting Lloyd. But, for the second time, Lloyd uses her own words against her before jumping off the tram and landing on a boat where Misako, Nya, and P.I.X.A.L. were waiting. Harumi watched them escape into the tunnel, as Garmadon declared that Ninjago was his.

Hunted

Firstbourne

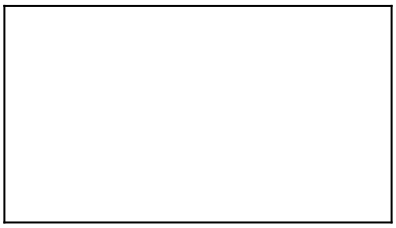
Harumi with Mr. E

Harumi and Mr. E travel to the top of Borg Tower to report to Lord Garmadon. Garmadon admits his confusion on how Lloyd is still out there, despite having

nothing. He contemplates using the Colossus to force his son out, but Harumi advises against it, telling him it will make the people of Ninjago desperate. She tells him she could use something more surgical and gives Mr. E the mission of finding Lloyd.

Iron & Stone

Harumi and the other generals of the Sons of Garmadon are summoned to Emperor Garmadon's throne, due to their failure to capture Lloyd. Harumi is intimidated by Garmadon and watches Mr. E approaches before him. Harumi explains that Mr. E did everything he could, however, they were unaware Lloyd had assistance from the Elemental Masters.



Harumi watching the destruction of Mr. E

Garmadon is outraged by this and uses his Destruction to lift Mr. E and tear him apart from the inside out. Harumi claims that Mr. E is just a machine built to follow orders, but Garmadon ignores this plea and continues to destroy Mr. E. Garmadon then finishes him off by tearing off his limbs, releasing his grip. Garmadon makes another demand for his son and threatens to tear Harumi apart if they fail again; she bows but hides the fact that she is scared by the threat.

Radio Free Ninjago

Harumi watching Lloyd's speech

Despite Mr. E's death, Harumi remains loyal to Garmadon. When he senses Lloyd's presence, she volunteers to handle tower security, informing Killow to keep an eye out. She was later, unknowingly, followed by Mr. Pale as she made her rounds. When Garmadon felt Lloyd's presence and assumed he was on the upper floor, she follows him into the elevator. Later, when Lloyd made his speech, Harumi tried using a recording of his loss against his father to stop him, but he overcomes it and continues speaking. After some time, Killow and she barge in, only to find them gone, but realizing the location of their base after seeing garbage trucks drive away.

How to Build a Dragon

Harumi almost killed by Garmadon

After learning the Resistance's location, she reports back to Garmadon, along with Killow and Ultra Violet. When she tells Garmadon that he had warned them that Lloyd was close and that she failed to protect him, the Emperor voices his agreement. Ultra Violet then tells Harumi it was her fault Lloyd was able to broadcast the message. Garmadon then asked her if he was not clear of what he would do if her machine failed him, to which Harumi replied she was.

Garmadon demanding the location of the Resistance's base

Garmadon then levitates her with his power, to which Harumi pleads with him by bringing up the fact that she was the one who resurrected him, but Garmadon is ready to kill her. However, Garmadon spares her when she tells him that she knows the location of the Resistance's base, and Harumi is then ordered to show him the location of the garbage depot. The Sons of Garmadon then travel there.

The Gilded Path

Harumi looking at Garmadon

The Sons of Garmadon ambush the Resistance, and a battle begins. Harumi arrives wearing the Mask of Hatred, and orders Lloyd to be taken alive. Lloyd and Skylor defeat the oncoming bikers, and Harumi attempts to defeat the Green Ninja herself, only to be held back by Skylor as Lloyd escapes. Skylor then attempts to pull the Mask from Harumi, but Harumi kicks her foe away. After, she turns around and is hit by the armored car that fled with Lloyd. She later stands with Garmadon as he watches them escape the Colossus.

Two Lies, One Truth

Harumi becoming Garmadon's "daughter"

After returning to find Garmadon missing, Harumi goes to find him, tracking the dark lord down to The Temple of Ressurection. He tells her that he had the chance to destroy his son, but he hesitated, even though Harumi only resurrected the dark Oni side of him. Harumi tells him that he encompasses

all and that he must let go of all he still loves. She tells him to take her as a daughter, so he can kill his son. Garmadon raises his blade as Harumi tells him she is his to command. Garmadon then dubs her his daughter, telling her to see her new father. He then tells her that together, they will kill the Green Ninja.

Harumi kidnapped

Later, Harumi, alongside Killow traveled to hunt down Lloyd. They search a community, asking around with force for his location. Lloyd finds out about the hunt and then has Mystake shapeshift to look like him to lead the bikers away. Lloyd's allies take out the bikers one by one until they all corner Harumi. Harumi sees Lloyd without his ninja gi and mocks him, calling him a "beggar in rags," only to be surrounded and captured.

The Weakest Link

Harumi taunting Lloyd

Harumi was tied up at The Resistance base, while Lloyd and the others debated what to do with her, debating whether trading her for the members locked in prison. Harumi mocks Lloyd, asking how he feels knowing that his father cares more for her than for him. Lloyd then says Garmadon is unlikely to want to trade. They are then called out of the room and Nya stays guarding her while the others discuss.

They return and drop the Oni Mask of Hatred at her feet. Harumi asks if they're going to use it, but Lloyd says he is not, as he believes it to be a trap and how she allowed herself to be caught. Harumi says that if she can't trick him, then she will just deliver a message, that Garmadon will destroy them all, before telling Lloyd that he can't win and will never change. She also taunts Lloyd for not having it in him to harm his father. Dareth blurts that she doesn't know Lloyd. Harumi insists otherwise and asks them how they see this ending, stating that there won't be a happy one, and that"once green is always green".

Later, Lloyd, Nya, and Skylor introduce Harumi to "herself" (who is actually Mystake in disguise). Harumi loudly asks if Mystake thinks that she can pass as her. Mystake repeats after Harumi in her normal voice, to which Nya points out that it might give her away. Mystake then changers her voice to sound exactly like Harumi. Harumi says that she'll never get away with impersonating her, though before she can say more, Nya puts a gag over her mouth and turns her chair around to face the corner.

After Dareth took watch, she managed to remove the gag, break free, and tie him up. She went back to Garmadon to stop Mystake and Skylor from getting his power of Destruction.

Saving Faith

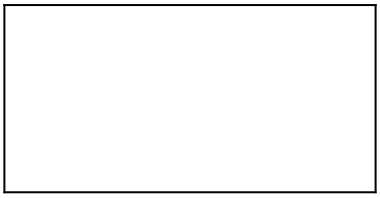
Harumi confronting Mystake

Harumi exposed Mystake, revealing her true identity to Garmadon. She warns her master, as Mystake transforms into her true Oni form and fights the Emperor. She attacks the Oni, knocking her to the ground before being

thrown aside. As Mistake created a dark vortex, Harumi gave another warning to Garmadon, as "Skylor" tried to touch him. He knocked her back, only to find it was Mystake. Skylor then touched him and escaped, while Garmadon fought the old lady.

Harumi realizing what she has done

Later on, she warned Garmadon to leave, but he refused. Fearing that he would fail and they would die, she runs away, abandoning him and ran down the steps from Borg Tower, using a zip line to another building. She ran inside as the Colossus hit the building and moved, causing the whole block to shake. She ran to find an exit, being about to leave, when she heard a young boy crying. She ran to where she heard it and she saw a family being separated by a lift, similar to what had happened to herself, during the attack of the Great Devourer. She remembered that day and decided to rescue the family, not wanting the child's parents to die, or the child ending up like her. She quickly guided them out but is trapped in the building herself. She tells the family to go and that she will find another way out.

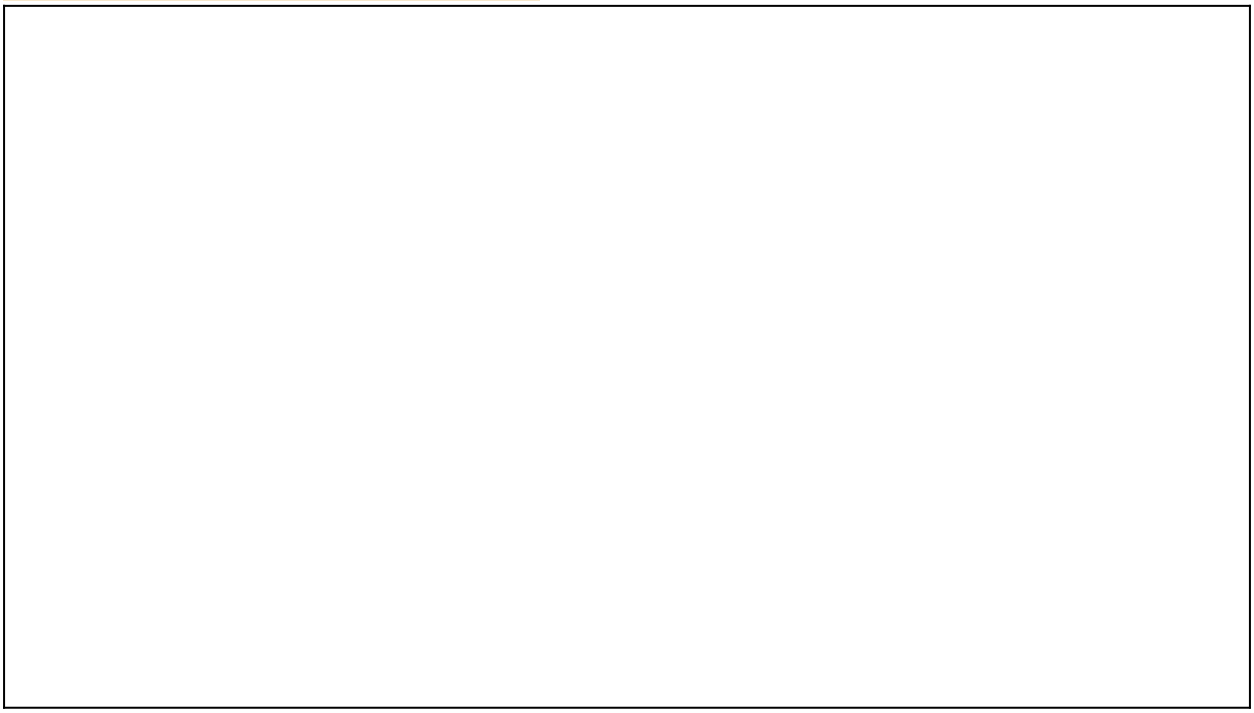


Harumi's death

She heads to the top of the building, just as the power struggle between Garmadon and Skylor causes the Colossus to hit the building again. The building then collapses, with Harumi still on the roof, as Lloyd and Garmadon

watch. Garmadon cries out in fury and sorrow, turning his rage on Lloyd because of Harumi's death.

A Sinister Shadow (flashback)



Harumi meeting The Overlord.

Harumi however, was intercepted by an individual calling himself the Crystal King, and offered to revive her if she became his humble servant. She accepts and is revived before discovering a pink crystal in her hand, telling her to head back to the Oni temple, and she complies. Returning to the Oni temple, Harumi inserted the crystal into the pedestal, transforming into the Crystal Temple before learning the Crystal King was the Overlord, who promises her peace in the balance and has her create an army of Vengestone warriors.

Harumi spent the next few months trying to find Vengestone before learning of Shintaro Mountain. Before the ninja arrived, Harumi tried to negotiate the price of Vengestone with Vangelis but was interrupted by the former's arrival. Unfortunately, the mining operation was then dismantled and

Vangelis was dethroned by the Ninja, resulting in her looking through other methods, such as buying it off smugglers, like Miss Demeanor, until she managed to get enough to create the Vengestone armybefore making plans to recruit the Ninja's old enemies and form a council, first bringing in a Nindroid called Mister F.

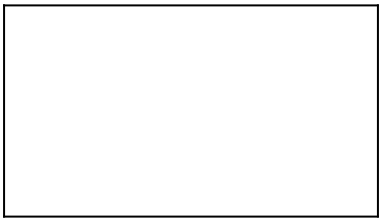
Crystalized

A Painful Promise

Harumi disguised as the "Kabuki Mask"

After Aspheera returns to her lair, she's met with a Crystal Spider, through which a hologram of a disguised Harumi appears. She invites Aspheera to join the Council of the Crystal King in a bid to have her revenge. Enthralled with this prospect, Aspheera sinisterly accepts.

Ninjago City vs. Ninja



Harumi visiting Lloyd

With the ninja imprisoned in Kryptarium Prison after freeing Aspheera, the Overlord had Harumi deliver a message to the captured ninja about his plan to assemble the Crystal Council for an impending invasion of Ninjago. Disguised as the Kabuki Mask, Harumi confronted Lloyd, where she relished the opportunity in sharing the Overlord's message, stating that she wanted to witness the despair and helpless on Lloyd's face as he saw the impending

destruction of everything he loved. As she departs, Lloyd frantically tries pursuing her, but he's overtaken by the prison guards.

That night, a Crystal Spider visits the imprisoned Vangelis and projects a hologram of Harumi, still disguised. She invites him to join the council, and Vangelis accepts.

Kryptarium Prison Blues

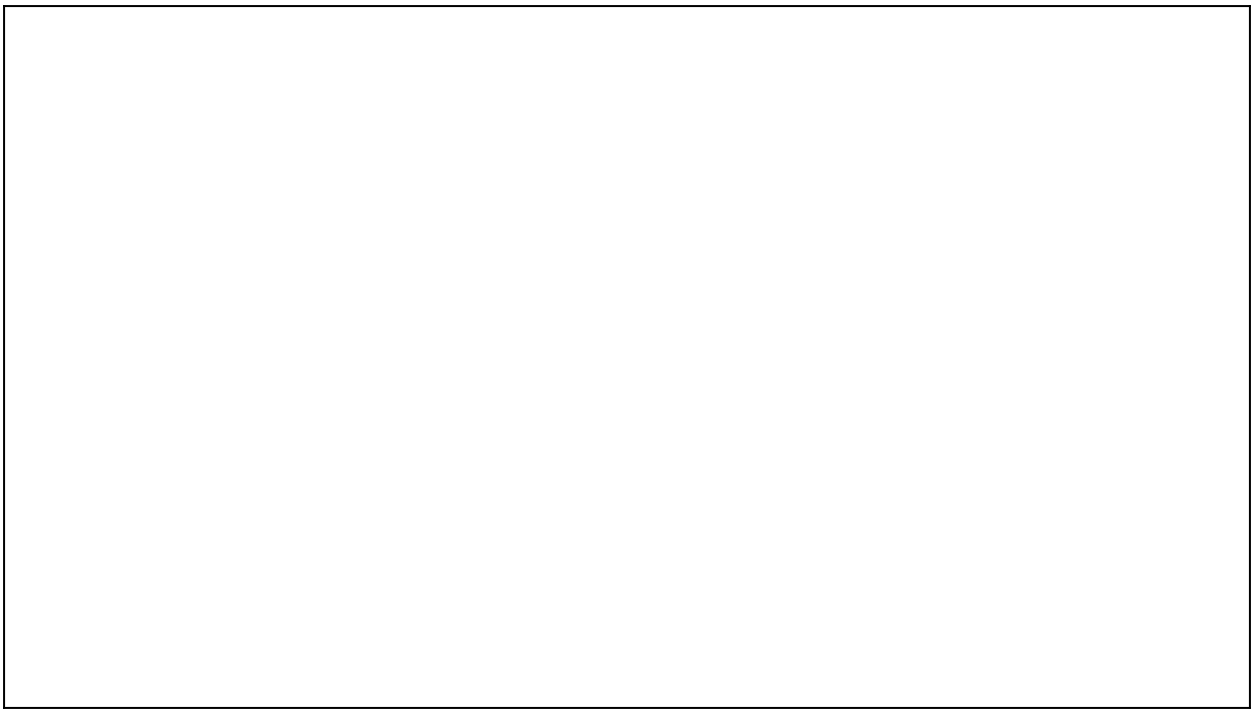
Kabuki Mask visiting Pythor

A swarm of Crystal Spiders infiltrate Krpytarium Prison and enter Pythor's cell. Once more via hologram, a disguised Harumi invites him to join the council. Pythor eagerly accepts the invitation and escapes with the spiders.

The Fifth Villain

Assuming The Mechanic is the next target to join the council, the ninja capture him and Lloyd disguises himself as the villain. A crystal spider projects Harumi's hologram before Lloyd, inviting "The Mechanic" to join the council. Lloyd ventures underground with the spiders.

The Council of the Crystal King

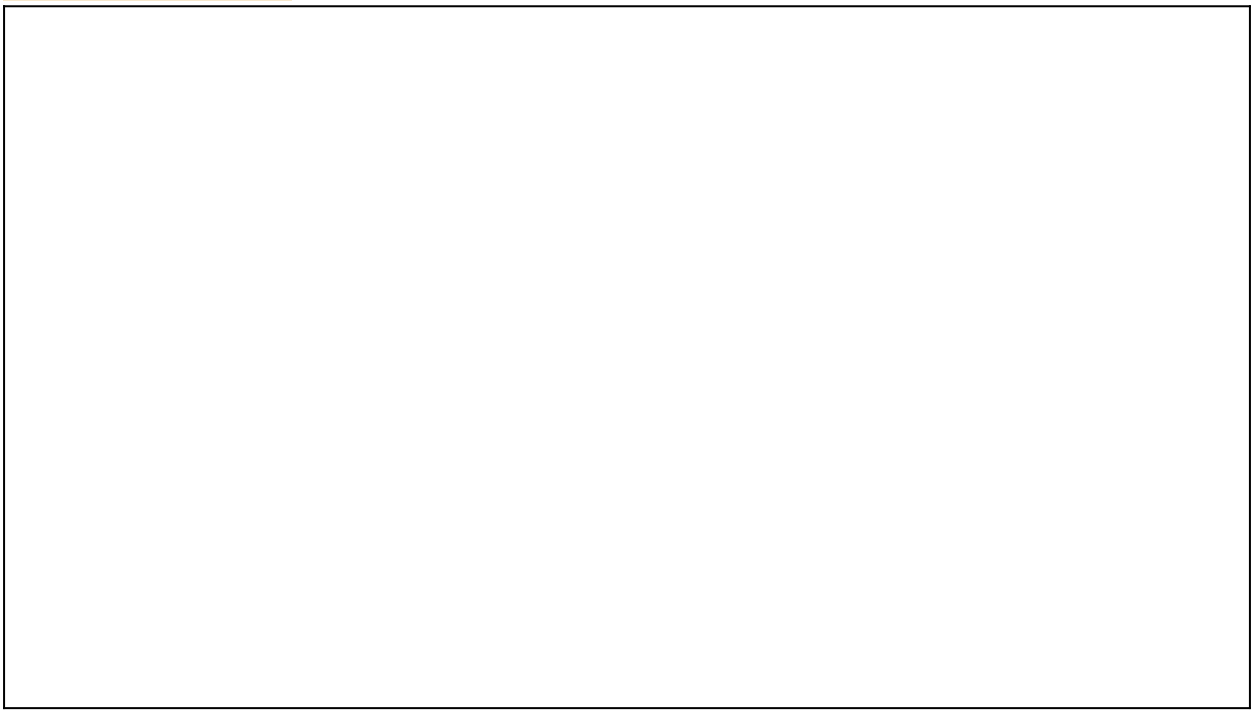


Harumi revealing her identity to Lloyd

Harumi eventually discovered that Lloyd disguised himself as the Mechanic to infiltrate the Crystal Council, as a Crystal Spider was capturing footage of the real Mechanic battling the ninja. After Lloyd entered the Crystal Council's meeting room, Harumi, disguised as the Kabuki Mask, had arrived. The council members were shocked to realize she was not the Crystal King but merely his messenger. Vangelis, dismissive of her presence, compared her to a servant, which prompted Harumi to warn him about his disrespectful tone. She reminded him that his new Shintaro wings were thanks to her and threatened to send him back to Shintaro's prison if he were to change his mind in joining the Crystal Council. Aspheera then asked about the Crystal King's plans, and Harumi stated that the details would be revealed soon. She cautioned them about the imposter among them, displaying footage of the Mechanic battling the ninja to expose Lloyd. Lloyd fought the council to escape, but Mister F shot him with the crystal gun, leaving him weakened

and slowly losing consciousness. Harumi and the council closed in on Lloyd as the former took the opportunity to taunt him about his desperation to uncover her identity as the Kabuki Mask. She challenged Lloyd, asking if he could guess or even sense who she was. To give him a hint, she began to sing Spider's in the House while removing her mask. As her true face was revealed, Lloyd was horrified to learn of Harumi's return before he lost consciousness.

A Sinister Shadow

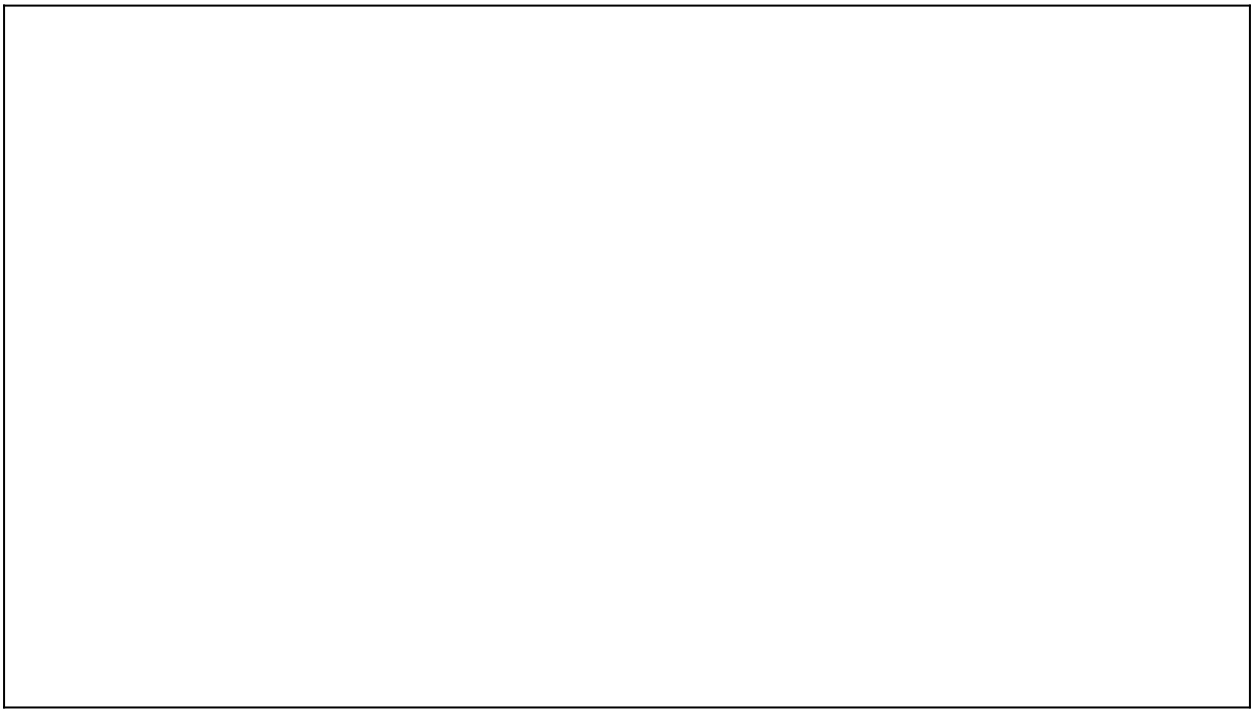


Harumi revealing to Lloyd her goals

Harumi reveals to Lloyd that she was the mysterious Vengestone merchant that was buying the large quantity of Vengestone to create the Crystal King's army and gathered a number of the ninja's foes. Lloyd expressed to Harumi his feelings for her despite her not returning them. Feeling shocked, Harumi confronted him about why he didn't go to look for her. Lloyd expressed that he did search for her through the rubble with his bare hands, but to no avail.

Harumi soon announces her plans to Lloyd in regards to the monastery and the Golden Weapons.

The Spider's Design

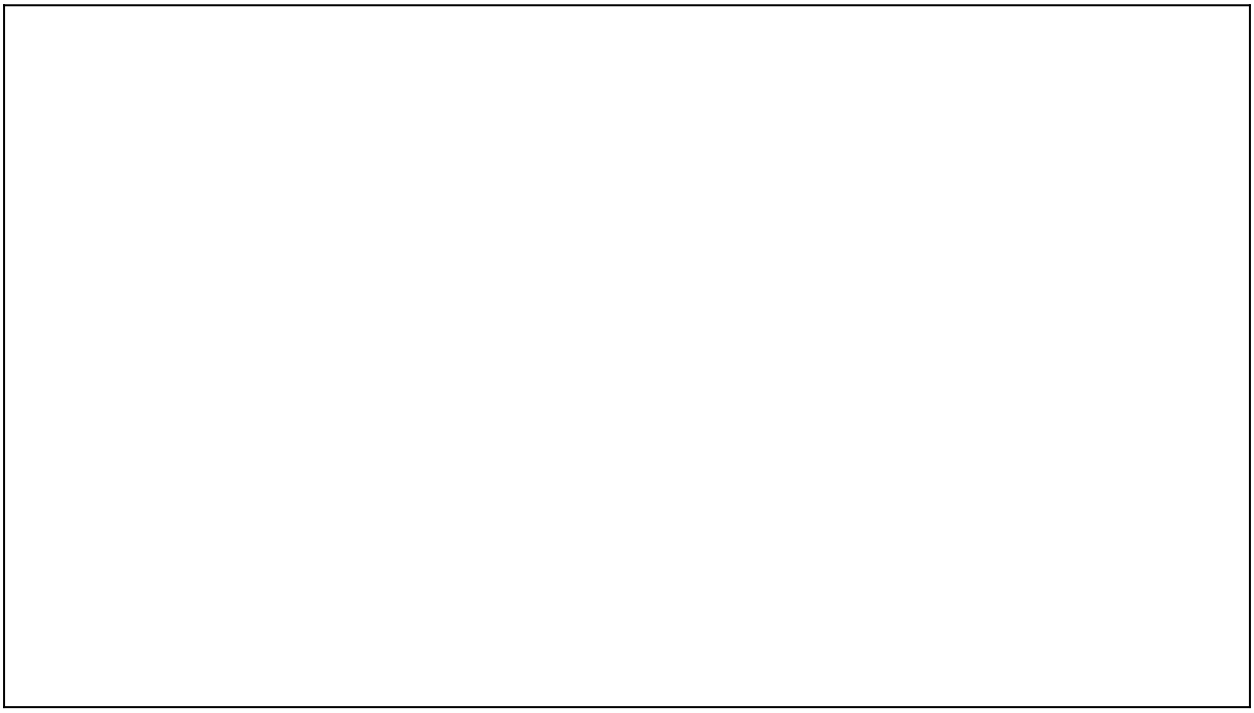


Harumi mocking Lloyd while he is in the cage

Harumi has Lloyd placed into a Vengestone crafted cage above a pool of lava, to have him witness the progress of her plans. Lloyd tried to convince Harumi that she doesn't want to get innocent people hurt. Harumi thought about it sadly, but a sudden purple glow in her eyes said otherwise. Harumi claimed that she knew of Lloyd's "strong" part that he has been repressing for a long time. Later, she reveals to Lloyd that she planted Crystal Spiders at the N line in attempts to kill the ninja. The Crystal Spiders then explodes, and Harumi, believing she had succeeded to kill them, turns to a once again heartbroken and tearful Lloyd telling him that they were gone and "apologizing" to him, though she was unaware that they survived in the BRTM-12. Using this to her advantage, she tries to convince Lloyd to join the Overlord's side, and reveals that she plans to dispose of Wu, Nya, P.I.X.A.L.,

and Skylor next. This in turn, triggers Lloyd's Oni side and fight against her using Destruction. However, when Lloyd realizes what he's doing and stops, he is shot down by Mister F's crystal gun while Harumi smiles, welcoming back the "son of Garmadon".

Darkness Within



Harumi telling Lloyd that he is just like his father.

Harumi leads the Crystal Council around the central crystal, as well as taunting Lloyd, who is now wrapped up in Vengestone chains. Harumi mentions to Lloyd that the Council were able to steal the Golden Weapons without a fight and tells him that Wu and the others were killed to, which Lloyd refuses to believe and thinks that Harumi is bluffing. Harumi then mentions how her parents were taken by the Great Devourer and again wants Lloyd to feel the same pain she did all of those years ago. Later, Lloyd tries to convince Harumi to change her ways, but she refuses, claiming that Ninjago shall only achieve peace when Darkness culminates the Balance. Harumi then has the Council place the Golden Weapons around the central

crystal and Aspheera to commence a ritual to crystalize the weapons into the Weapons of Destruction and allow the Overlord to take physical form.

The Coming of the King

With the Overlord back in Ninjago after so long, he begins taunting Lloyd, and using his powers to empower his Crystal Council, and move the Crystal Temple into the sky. When Lloyd manages to escape the Council, the Overlord orders his Council to destroy him. Harumi, however, seems reluctant to do so as the Overlord talks to the saddened Harumi, saying that she might be able to convince Lloyd to join his side, but the Overlord claims its too late for that now and has her follow his commands.

As the rest of the Council chase down Lloyd, they collide their Weapon of Destruction in an attempt to destroy Lloyd, but he jumps over the explosion and escapes. Harumi arrives and furiously warns the Council to not let the Weapons touch each other again, due to their immense power. When Harumi chases Lloyd, she leads the Council in the opposite direction he went in. Outside of the Crystal Council, Harumi once again tries to convince Lloyd to join the Overlord with her, but instead is pulled of the Crystal Temple by Lloyd and they both fall into a river in Primeval's Eye.

Return to Primeval's Eye

Lloyd traverses through the jungle with Harumi acting as his prisoner. She tries to get into Lloyd's head again and convince him to be on the Overlord's side. When she is able to get hold of her katana, she gives chases, but the two both fall into a pit of quicksand. Harumi then begrudgingly hands over her katana to Lloyd as he tries to save himself and her out of the pit. Harumi then ends up being pulled out on the quicksand and onto Lloyd. Lloyd kicks her off, and forces her to tie her hands up in a vine, though she pins him down, and the two begin to fight briefly. As Lloyd binds Harumi's hands after

defeating her, he explains to her that he's rather be gullible and see the good in others rather than deceitful and see the bad in others, and comments on how Harumi only has anger, fear and hatred in her, right before the Crystal Council arrive on Dragonides to hunt down both Lloyd and Harumi. Harumi finally breaks free of his grasp and chases him down. When Lloyd reaches a dead end, she is shocked to see Wu and the ninja still alive and with the *Destiny's Bounty* back. As they fight the Crystal Council, they eventually pull back when they see the Crystal Island being moved by the Overlord. As Lloyd boards the *Bounty*, he exchanges looks with Harumi before they both leave.

Crystastrophe

The Overlord moves the Crystal Island above the farmers' village. Harumi stands at the front, watching below as the Overlord floats to her. The Overlord scolds Harumi for not destroying Lloyd when she had the chance, and even went on to express his belief that Harumi still harbors feelings for Lloyd. Harumi begins to retaliate, but is quickly silenced by him. Harumi then listens to what the Overlord has planned for the fate of Ninjago City, intending to corrupt the ninja and their elemental powers, expressing some uncertainty.

Brave But Foolish

As the Crystal Island finally reaches in the skies above Ninjago City, Harumi warns the Overlord of Zane’s arrival in his Golden Dragon Jet. The Overlord belives that Zane's attack will fail, but he was proven wrong when he realized the ninja upgraded their vehicles, and summons Dragonides to attack him, as well as Wu, Nya, Lloyd and Garmadon on the *Bounty*. As Harumi and the Overlord watch Garmadon in his Oni Form destroy some of the Dragonides to help the ninja, Harumi coldly glares at Garmadon for this,

implying that she no longer idolized him anymore and abandoned whatever respect she had for him. Harumi then jumps onto another Dragonide and destroys one of the *Bounty*'s thrusters in retaliation, allowing the Overlord to strike down the *Bounty*.

Safe Haven

Harumi passed through the city on a Dragonide, looking for the ninja, and unknowingly passed Kai, Cole and Skylor who were hiding.

An Issue of Trust

Harumi was able to get the ninja's current location as a newspaper warehouse, thanks to Mister F's intercepting a radio transmission between Wu and Cole. She relays the information over to the Overlord, who praises her for it. The Overlord then orders Harumi and the rest of the council to dispatch their armies and the Dragonides to the warehouse.

After Harumi and the council members unleash their armies against the ninja and their allies, Harumi reports back to the Overlord, who then gets attacked by Garmadon and Lloyd from behind, much to Harumi's shock. While attacking the Overlord, Garmadon coldly voices his disappointment towards Harumi for siding with the Overlord by ironically declaring how surprised she is to see him again.

Dragon Form

Lloyd pleaded with Harumi to switch sides, proposing that they join forces to combat the Overlord together. However, Harumi adamantly refused, asserting that the only way to bring an end to the ongoing conflicts was for one side of the balance to emerge victorious. She informed Lloyd that he lacked the necessary strength to prevail. While Garmadon and Lloyd engaged in a fierce confrontation with the Overlord in his centaur form, Harumi opted to stay out of the direct combat. As the tide turned in favor of

the Overlord, he maliciously revealed that he was the mastermind behind corrupting the Great Devourer and orchestrating its attack on Garmadon, all in pursuit of the ideal vessel for his return. The Overlord confessed that the events that happened because of Garmadon being bitten by the Great Devourer were all part of his elaborate scheme. Upon learning the truth, Harumi was overcome with shock, realizing her horrible mistake in aiding the very being who was responsible for her parents' deaths. When the Overlord planned to end Garmadon, Harumi intervened, saving Garmadon's life and severing the Overlord's hand, vehemently condemning him for the role he played in her parents' death. Harumi joined forces with Garmadon and Lloyd in their fight against the Overlord. Even when the Resistance managed to reclaim the Golden Weapons and defeat the crystal army for good, the Overlord regenerated his hand and arrogantly declared that their efforts had failed. He then proceeded to redirect the Crystal Island towards the ninja, intent on crystallizing all of Ninjago.

Roots

Despite Harumi's efforts to aid Garmadon and Lloyd, they all end up being defeated by the Overlord, who severely injures Garmadon and sends Lloyd to his apparent death, much to Harumi's distraught. The Overlord successfully petrifies all life in Ninjago, including the ninja and their allies, in retaliation. Witnessing this, Harumi mopes in complete remorse, finally realizing the horrible significance that her actions have contributed to the Overlord's success. Believing to have won, the Overlord attempts to spitefully kill Harumi as punishment for her defiance against him. However, the ninja sacrificed the Weapons before they were petrified, allowing the powers to form into the Golden Ultra Dragon to save Lloyd from his fall and allowing him one last chance to fight against the Overlord. Obliging Lloyd's wishes to

take cover, Harumi watches as Lloyd and the Dragon destroy the Overlord's form. Lloyd, Harumi, Garmadon and the Dragon then escape from the exploding Crystal Island, freeing all life in Ninjago. Upon witnessing the ninja reuniting with Lloyd and Garmadon, Harumi finds herself being stared by the ninja for her actions, though Garmadon and Lloyd assured that she changed sides as she learned of what the Overlord did to her family. She then makes amends with Lloyd and is last seen helping the ninja rebuild the Monastery.

Other appearances and mentions

Tales from the Monastery of Spinjitzu

Samurai X-Treme

Nya, when imagining herself saving the village in the valley from Skulkin using an upgraded Samurai Mech, a young Harumi was seen with her parents as residents of the village.

Secrets of the Forbidden Spinjitzu

Secret of the Wolf

Lloyd mentioned Harumi when he talked to "Red" about all the things that went wrong in his life. When he got into an argument with Akita, she taunted him by asking if he would defeat the Ice Emperor "by boring him to death with stories about Harumi", much to Lloyd's dismay.

Prime Empire

Stop, Drop and Side Scroll

When Lloyd faced Avatar Harumi in *Prime Empire*, he was reluctant to attack her until he was sure it was not the "real" Harumi.

Master of the Mountain

Into the Dark

When the ninja traveled to the Kingdom of Shintaro, Lloyd warned Cole about Princess Vania, stating that all princesses are the same. Cole asked if this had something to do with Harumi, which Lloyd denied. Cole stated that Harumi was the only case where a princess couldn't be trusted.

Seabound

A Big Splash

Harumi employed Miss Demeanor to smuggle Vengestone for her and meet up near the farmers' village. And in exchange, she would pay her three times the money than she originally does.

Crystalized

The Fall of the Monastery

Before attacking Nya, Aspheera delivered a message from Harumi, "bidding her farewell," to the group, much to Nya's shock hearing that Harumi is alive.

Christofern

After Lloyd said they don't need Garmadon's help, Wu countered that by saying they do, saying that their enemies are outnumbering that and the Overlord and Harumi have returned. Hearing Harumi's name, Garmadon expressed surprise, saying that she was like a daughter to him.

A Lesson in Anger

While training Lloyd, Garmadon got angry at him, saying that he has never found himself in a more hopeless situation than this, including that it's like Lloyd wants Ninjago to fall to the Overlord. He then said that Harumi would at least understand what he was getting at. Hearing all of this, Lloyd got angry and his hands began to glow purple.

Abilities and Weapons

Abilities

- **Combat:** Being a princess for years, Harumi wasn't trained to be a skilled fighter. However, she likely had some acrobatic skills, as she was able to escape through the Royal Palace's rooftops with ease and even made a flip to jump from a roof and run from Lloyd for a short time. When attacking Lloyd inside the Oni Temple, she is shown to have some skills with a dagger (possibly taught by her comrades in the SOG). However, in most of her fights, Harumi

would often use the Oni Mask of Hatred's powers in her favor (while also using extra weapons such as another dagger in "Big Trouble, Little Ninjago" and dual-wielding katanas in "The Gilded Path"). She was likely also adept to fight with a single katana, as she possessed one when looking for Garmadon in "The Weakest Link." With that, she could be considered a remarkable fighter as she was able to defeat Lloyd, the Green Ninja, twice.

- **Superhuman Strength (briefly):** Upon being resurrected by the Overlord, Harumi was briefly bestowed superhuman strength by a pink crystal.

Weapons

- **Dagger:** In the Oni Temple, Harumi used a dagger when confronting Lloyd.
- **Oni Mask of Hatred:** Harumi used the Oni Mask of Hatred.
- **Katana:** After being resurrected, Harumi used a regular katana before it transformed into a crystal katana.

Appearance

Harumi has long bleached white hair fashioned in a high ponytail (as the Jade Princess), in a bun with hair sticks (disguised as a civilian), or worn down with hime bangs (as the Quiet One).

In the Palace, she wore a green kimono, a white cape with red lotus flowers and a collar, a golden headpiece, and kabuki makeup.

As a civilian, she wore green overalls with a dark green hood, a shirt with a similar pattern as her cape underneath and her full lips painted red.

As the Quiet One, she wore black clothing and red face paint over her eyes with no lipstick. In Sons of Garmadon and Hunted, her clothing had a dark

blue sash, silver spikes and patterning, alongside a blue sash around her waist. As of Crystalized, her clothing was completely black, with some gray detailing on her torso and with no spikes or sashes.

While wearing the Mask of Hatred, Harumi's body became completely covered in indestructible stone with cracks of purple magma. When she wore the mask for the first time, her hairstyle, torso and legs were of her civilian outfit, but for her other appearances, she used the design of her Quiet One outfit.

As the Kabuki Mask, she wore black robes, a cloak, and a blue and white kabuki mask with glowing yellow eyes to hide her face.

After being empowered by the Crystal King following his full return to Ninjago, Harumi wore metal armor with glowing pink details, the Overlord's symbol on her torso, purple sleeves, and metallic gray/black legs. She also gained purple eyes, which would glow whenever she embraced the essence of Darkness.

Before losing her biological parents, Harumi was a young child of around 9–10 years old[3] with light blonde hair. As a child, she wore a brown long-sleeved "frog button" shirt like her mother and had bangs and her hair in two braids. After being adopted, she wore a green kimono and makeup but no cape or headpieces.

Personality

Originally, Harumi was a very normal child, as she used to happily play with her ninja toys. However, after her parents died, she grew jaded and vengeful towards the ninja, blaming them for letting her parents get killed. Harumi grew emotionally unstable and bitter due to the lack of parental love and attentiveness to her emotional needs from her adopted parents. She became

a master of deception and disguise, pretending to be the benevolent princess of Ninjago for years. In this princess persona, she was very kind-hearted, sweet, and seemingly cared deeply for all of her subjects. However, in her true identity as the Quiet One, Harumi was far more cold, ruthless, and hateful, having no remorse at causing the explosion that killed her adoptive parents. She was also incredibly determined, stopping at nothing to resurrect Garmadon, the person that she saw as a true savior for killing the Great Devourer, even after being informed that Lord Garmadon would not have a soul upon resurrection. Nevertheless, Harumi was misguided and a bit delusional when she thought that he is the hero that Ninjago deserves, thus having beliefs that it would be better under his tyrannical rule.

After Garmadon took over the Sons of Garmadon, Harumi seemed comfortable taking the role of second-in-command. However, she began to exhibit signs of fear and distrust of her master, especially after Garmadon destroyed Mr. E for failure. She even had a moment of cowardice when the Colossus rampaged against Skylor. However, Harumi ultimately proved herself to be not completely evil, as when a family was trapped in the same building she was in, she looked remorseful. Despite the danger to herself, she saved the family, all just because she was reminded of how she had suffered the same experience and did not want the child to have the same fate as her. Despite her initial sacrifice, Harumi would still harbor resentment for the ninja (Lloyd in particular) and continue her vengeful, villainous ways after being resurrected by the the Overlord. As the Kabuki Mask, Harumi kept her true identity a secret to everyone while showing a willingness for cooperation in uniting the ninja's greatest enemies in revenge against them and their allies.

During her time with the Overlord, Harumi became somewhat calmer and mellow. Despite her villainous ways, there were moments she hesitated and felt conflicted with some of her decisions. In "The Spider's Design," it appears that she didn't want innocent people hurt, as Lloyd mentions. Nevertheless, Harumi accepts the Overlord's plan of plunging Ninjago into eternal darkness, which she believed will bring peace. And because of her tragic experiences, she wanted a world where there was no conflict in which everyone would be safe, even though her allegiance and actions were misguided. However, Harumi became conflicted about the Overlord's plan in attacking Ninjago City in order to lure the Ninja and corrupt them for their elemental powers. Thus, she began to exhibit signs of doubt and irritation towards the Overlord's more aggressive and strong arm tactics.
After learning that the Overlord was responsible for corrupting the Great Devourer and therefore being responsible for her parent's deaths, Harumi had a sudden change of heart, betraying the Overlord and siding with Lloyd and Garmadon. When Garmadon was severely injured and Lloyd was presumably dead for a brief moment, she became distraught and moped in complete remorse, feeling guilty for her actions. This is also the case when Harumi looked sad before being comforted by Lloyd. Following the third defeat of the Overlord, she took part in the reconstruction of the monastery.

Official descriptions

LEGO.com description

Princess Harumi, also known as the Jade Princess, is the adopted daughter of the Emperor and Empress of NINJAGO® world.[4]

Crystalized

Once the princess of the NINJAGO® world, the death of Harumi’s parents to The Great Devourer led her down a path of vengeance. Under the name of

‘The Quiet One’, Harumi was also the original leader of the feared ‘Sons of Garmadon’ biker gang, who aimed to bring Lord Garmadon back to life.[5]

It was thought Princess Harumi had died several years earlier, but she now works for The Crystal King and has built an army of Vengestone Warriors for him to stage an attack against the ninja. She had previously been in a romantic relationship with Lloyd and hopes she can rekindle it and bring him over to the dark side. Princess Harumi was previously known as the Jade Princess of NINJAGO® City and The Quiet One, leader of the Sons of Garmadon.[6]

Relationships

Main article: Harumi's relationships

Family

- Unnamed (father; deceased)
- Unnamed(mother; deceased)
- Emperor of Ninjago (adoptive father; deceased)
- Empress of Ninjago (adoptive mother; deceased)

Allies

Enemies

- Great Devourer(deceased)
- Hutchins(deceased)
- Crabby
- Ninjago Police(formerly)
- Elemental Masters
- Mystake(deceased)
- Colossus (former ally; destroyed)
- The Resistance(formerly)
- The Overlord(former ally)

- Sons of Garmadon(formerly)
- Crystal Army(formerly)
- Miss Demeanor(formerly)
- Ninja (former enemies)
- Sons of the First Spinjitzu Master(former enemies)
- Misako (former enemy)
- Skylor (former enemy)

Appearances

Sets

Boxed Sets

- 70643 Temple of Resurrection (Princess)
- 70651 Throne Room Showdown (Quiet One)
- 70658 Oni Titan (Quiet One)
- 71772 The Crystal King (Crystalized)
- 71837 Ninjago City Workshops (casual)
- 71861 The Old Town (Kabuki Mask attire)

Misc Sets

- 5005257 NINJAGO Minifigure Collection (Oni Mask of Hatred)

Ninjago: Masters of Spinjitzu

Season 8: Sons of Garmadon

- 75. "The Mask of Deception"
- 76. "The Jade Princess"
- 77. "The Oni and the Dragon"

- 78. "Snake Jaguar"
- 79. "Dead Man's Squall"
- 80. "The Quiet One"
- 81. "Game of Masks"
- 82. "Dread on Arrival"
- 83. "True Potential"
- 84. "Big Trouble, Little Ninjago"

Season 9: Hunted

- 85. "Firstbourne"
- 86. "Iron & Stone"
- 87. "Radio Free Ninjago"
- 88. "How to Build a Dragon"
- 89. "The Gilded Path"
- 90. "Two Lies, One Truth"
- 91. "The Weakest Link"
- 92. "Saving Faith"
- 93. "Lessons for a Master" (mentioned)

Tales from the Monastery of Spinjitzu

- 1. "Master Class" (painting)
- 3. "The Weekend Drill" (painting)
- 5. "Blue Lightning" (painting)
- 6. "Samurai X-Treme" (daydream)

Season 10: March of the Oni

- 95. "The Darkness Comes" (painting)
- 98. "Endings" (painting)

Season 11: Secrets of the Forbidden Spinjitzu

- 99. "Wasted True Potential" (painting)
- 100. "Questing for Quests" (painting)
- 101. "A Rocky Start" (painting)
- 110. "Under Siege" (painting)
- 117. "The Absolute Worst" (silhouette; story)
- 121. "Secret of the Wolf" (mentioned)

Prime Empire Original Shorts

- 1. "Let's Dance" (painting)

Season 12: Prime Empire

- 140. "Stop, Drop and Side Scroll" (mentioned)

Season 13: Master of the Mountain

- 145. "Shintaro" (painting)
- 146. "Into the Dark" (mentioned)
- 151. "The Skull Sorcerer" (mentioned)

Season 14: Seabound

- 165. "A Big Splash" (painting)

Season 15: Crystalized

- 181. "Farewell the Sea" (mentioned)
- 183. "The Shape of Nya" (mentioned)
- 186. "A Painful Promise" (hologram; as the Kabuki Mask)
- 187. "Ninjago City vs. Ninja" (as the Kabuki Mask)
- 188. "Kryptarium Prison Blues" (hologram; as the Kabuki Mask)
- 191. "The Fifth Villain" (hologram; as the Kabuki Mask)
- 192. "The Council of the Crystal King"
- 193. "A Sinister Shadow"

- 194. "The Spider's Design"
- 195. "The Fall of the Monastery" (mentioned)
- 196. "Darkness Within"
- 197. "The Coming of the King"
- 198. "Return to Primeval's Eye"
- 199. "Crystastrophe"
- 200. "Christofern" (mentioned)
- 201. "A Lesson in Anger" (mentioned)
- 202. "Brave But Foolish"
- 205. "Safe Haven" (no lines)
- 207. "Distress Calls" (indirectly mentioned)
- 208. "An Issue of Trust"
- 209. "Dragon Form"
- 210. "Roots"

Books

- *Garmadon Rulez!*
- *The Splinter in the Blind Man's Eye* (mentioned)

Comics

Ninjago: Garmadon

- 1. "Two Moon Village" (flashback)

Ninjago Magazine

- 35. "A Night Out!" (non-canon)
- 37. "Brawl of the Jungle!" (mentioned)
- 91. "Vengeance at Sea" (indirectly mentioned; non-canon)
- 94. "Fury in the Forest!" (non-canon)

Ninjago: Legacy Magazine
- 36. "Masked, Evil"

Etymology

Her name has many written variations in Japanese and therefore has multiple meanings. Some include *sunny*, *spring*, *beauty*, and *govern*. Her name also means "clear weather" (□) (haru) and "sea, ocean" (□) (mi).

Behind the scenes

- Regarding her design:
  - Her hairstyle as a civilian is the same as Koko's hair from *The LEGO Ninjago Movie*,while as the princess it is the same as Koko's alter ego Lady Iron Dragon's. As the Quiet One, she has the same hairpiece as the movie version of Garmadon and Wu's mother in a portrait.
  - Her civilian design incorporates Wyldstyle's hood (both the hooded and unhooded version) from *The LEGO Movie*. The unhooded version was previously used on Chad.
  - As a child, she uses the hairpiece of the Pretzel Girl from Minifigures Series 11, which was previously used on Dusk.
  - Her third, "evil" appearance was conceived by the designers, so the creators put it into the show.[7]
  - After she gains her "evil" appearance, her lips have changed from red to pink and her mouth is wider than it was previously.
- She was the third major villain to have a hidden identity. The first two were Pythor, who was revealed to be the cloaked stranger in

Rebooted, and Krux, who was revealed to be the true identity of Dr. Saunders.

- She is somewhat like Morro, seeking revenge because of something she could have had or been. In her case, she could have still had her parents, and in Morro's case, he could have been the Green Ninja.
- She is the second main female villain after the Preeminent, the third being Aspheera.
- How Harumi awakens back in the living world is similar to how Lloyd did after speaking with his grandfather during "Endings," as both were near death and met with an ancient powerful being.
- Harumi was originally going to return as a spider-themed cyborg for Crystalized. However, this was changed because of *Monkie Kid*already having a Spider Queen character.[8]

Trivia

- She is younger than the ninja.[9] She was likely in her early teens in Sons of Garmadon and Hunted, around Lloyd's chronological age, as she looked to be the same age as him at the time of "Day of the Great Devourer." Specifically, she was said to be 9-10 during the flashback of her parents' deaths.[3]
- She is the second character that was adopted by another family, the first being Jay.
- She was first hinted at when Tommy Andreasenresponded, "Be careful what you wish for!" when a fan spoke about wanting there to be a human female villain.[10]

- Several subtle hints alluded to her identity as the Quiet One before the reveal.
    - In "The Oni and the Dragon", she is seen smiling to herself as the ninja discuss the Sons of Garmadon's possession of the Oni Masks on the *Bounty*.
    - In "Dead Man's Squall", she makes sure to grab the map before heading to the deck as she needed it to get to the last mask.
    - In "The Quiet One", she quickly kisses Lloyd on the cheek when he starts to question how she learned to throw a sword effectively to distract him, realizing he was catching on.
- She has said herself to be a slob, with an extremely unkempt room.[11]
    - However, this may just have been an excuse made up to trick Lloyd into following her, to make it appear that it was ransacked.
- In the book, *Garmadon Rulez!*, it is explained that she began plotting to resurrect Garmadon after the events of Possession.
    - Harumi's background is further explored in the book, and more was hinted to be "subtly" explored in "various media."[12][13]One of these is her appearance in "Samurai X-Treme," but it may not be an accurate depiction of Harumi's past, as it took place in Nya's daydream.[14]

- She was born with blonde hair, and it became white at some point after being adopted into the Royal Family. It is unknown if this is a tradition of some sort in Ninjago. Hair bleaching is not a practice done in actual East-Asian royalties, historical or present.
- The product animation for 70643 Temple of Resurrection showed Harumi and Hutchins fighting the ninja, spoiling her identity.
    - Another possible hint was when Hutchins told Lloyd to stay away from her if he knows what's good for him.
- The Great Devourer indirectly made her evil. This is similar to Lord Garmadon, but he was corrupted by its venom; Harumi was corrupted by the grief caused by the Devourer, as well as the knowledge that Garmadon destroyed it.
- Harumi, along with Garmadon and The Overlord, are the only main antagonists to successfully take over Ninjago.
- She wore the Oni Mask of Hatred in only three episodes: "Game of Masks," "Big Trouble, Little Ninjago," and "The Gilded Path." Ultra Violet also wore the mask in only three episodes.
- Harumi is one of the few antagonists of either a season or an episode to have been captured, the others being Pythor ("The Titanium Ninja"-"Kryptarium Prison Blues") and Soto ("Pirates vs. Ninja"-"Return of the Ice Emperor" ("Enkrypted" in an erased timeline).
- According to the book, *Garmadon Rulez!*, Harumi loved ice cream, cats, and noodles with a lot of garlic, although she was hardly allowed to eat garlic since "princesses weren't allowed to have bad breath."

- In *Garmadon Rulez!*, Harumi seemingly refers to the Quiet One as someone outside herself, claiming that she does some things "because the Quiet One tells her to".
- The village that Harumi was depicted to live in in "Samurai X-Treme" is the same one the Sons of Garmadon attacked in "Big Trouble, Little Ninjago" and the same one Nelson currently lives in.
- Harumi idolized Garmadon ever since he destroyed the Devourer, but specifically only *Lord* Garmadon. As seen in *Garmadon Rulez!*, she considered the good Master Garmadon a shadow of his former self and was disappointed by him "giving up on his dreams."
- In Season 10's intro, Harumi can be heard saying "Lloyd." She is also the only character to speak in the intro.
- She is one of the eleven characters to have a cape in the sets, the others being Lloyd, Chen, Morro, the Time Twins, Wu, Blizzard Sword Masters, Akita, Mammatus, and the Bone King.
- She is the first princess to appear in the show.
- The LEGO.com character bio refers to her as Princess Harumi Jade, this implies that Jade is her last name. However, this is likely an error, leaving her real last name unknown.
- Harumi seems to take an interest in spiders, using them as the basis for the Spider Hackerand Crystal Spiders. This may be because of a childhood song she listened to, being Spider's in the House.
- Harumi is the second character to disguise herself as a male when hiding her identity. The first being Faith.

- The reason she doesn't blame Pythor for releasing the Great Devourer is that she has no way of knowing that it was him who had released the Devourer.[15]
    - She also did not read *Jack the Rabbit* and therefore did not know that she should never trust a snake.[16]
- Harumi is the fifth and final main villain in the original series to be redeemed, the others are Lord Garmadon, Morro, Master Yang, and Unagami.
- She is a really good artist, having drawn most illustrations in *Garmadon Rulez!*
- Harumi's character draws some similarities to several characters from other franchises.
    - Her disdain at Garmadon's redemption at the end of Season 2 is similar to Kylo Ren, from the sequel trilogy of *Star Wars*, who idolized his grandfather Darth Vader. Both characters worshiped and looked up to a previous antagonist, while at the same time seeing the redemption of the former villains as them giving in to weakness. However, Ren redeems himself shortly before his death, meanwhile, it is unknown whether Harumi redeemed herself as well. She did deliver one final act of kindness helping a family get to safety shortly before her death, which may hint toward it.
    - Harumi is also similar to Kaguya from *The Tale of Princess Kaguya* since both were born/reborn to peasant families and became nobles later in life, both were very

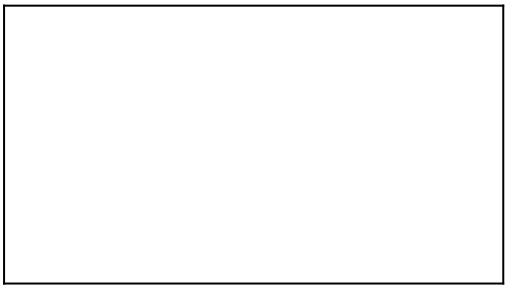
happy with their normal, simpler lives but were miserable when they became nobles, both their adoptive families were convinced their daughters could be happy with their new lifestyles and ignored their children's problems, and both girls end up dying (or having her life reset in Kaguya's case).

- Harumi is also similar to Toph Beifong from the series *Avatar: The Last Airbender* as both were part of an upper-class family, both were sheltered and not allowed to leave their homes, both managed to trick their parents into believing they were the docile, loving daughters they were expected to be, both sneaked out of their homes during the night to lead a double life and engage in dangerous activities their parents didn't approve of and both were very skilled fighters.
    - Additionally, Harumi's Kabuki mask look is similar to the appearance of Zuko's Blue Spirit identily from *Avatar: The Last Airbender,* both wearing a blue and white inspired from Japanese culture (*Kabuki* for Harumi and *Oni* for Zuko) and a similar understated black outfit with a hood. Both use these looks to hide their identily from others.
- Harumi is also similar to Evelyn Deavor from the film *Incredibles 2*, as they both sought revenge on a group of

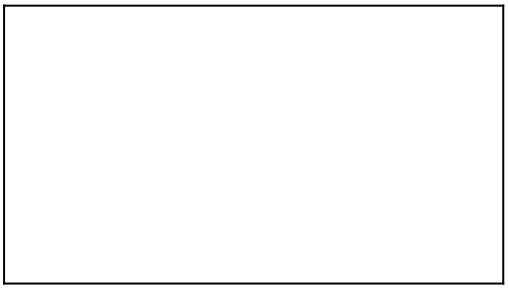
protectors for failing to prevent their parent's deaths, and pretended to be on the side of the protectors.

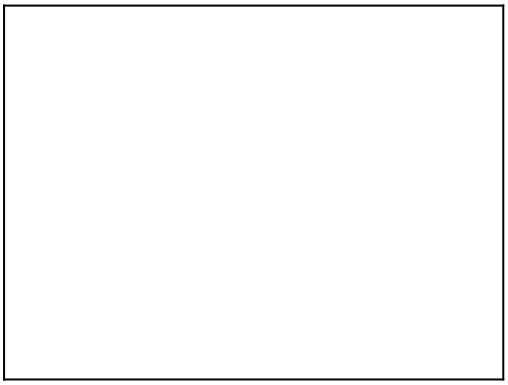
- Chris "Doc" Wyatt confirmed Harumi survived the Merge.[1]

Videos



Harumi's Sons of Garmadon Character Spot with Lloyd, Nya, and Ultra Violet





The Leitmotif of Harumi

Translations

Language Name Arabic هارومي Chinese (Simplified) □□ Czech Harumi French Harumi Japanese □□□ Russian Харуми Ukrainian Харумі

Foreign voice actors

Dub Voice Actors Arabic ياسمين سمير (Season 8)لنا عز العرب (Season 12) سارة اميل (Season 15)معتز علي (as Kabuki Mask) French (Europe) Héléna Coppejans German Rieke WernerDaniel Schütter (as Kabuki Mask) Hungarian Fanni Gulás Japanese Yahagi Sayuri Polish Milena Staszuk (Season 8 - Season 9)Magdalena Herman-Urbańska (Season 15)Jan Aleksandrowicz-Krasko (as Kabuki Mask) RussianTatyana Shitova (S8-S9)Vladimir Rybalchenko (S15, as Kabuki Mask)Polina Rtisheva (S15 (EP12-EP18))Alyona Sozinova (S15 (EP19-EP30)) Spanish (LA) Fernanda Robles (Season 8 - Season 9) Karen Fonseca (Season 15) Andrés García (as Kabuki Mask) Spanish (ESP) Laura Peña (Season 8 - Season 9) Majo Montesinos (Season 15) César Lechiguero (as Kabuki Mask)

References

1. https://bsky.app/profile/docwyattbeyond.bsky.social/post/3lotlqb4xr22c
2. "Game of Masks"
3. https://x.com/TommyAndreasen/status/861647152329740288
4. https://web.archive.org/web/20180712151409/https://www.lego.com/en-us/themes/ninjago/characters/princess-harumi-jade-55446eace0b34e1bb6108331d355cb49
5. https://www.lego.com/en-us/kids/ninjago
6. https://www.lego.com/en-gb/kids/characters/ninjago/princess-harumi-55446eace0b34e1bb6108331d355cb49
7. https://x.com/TommyAndreasen/status/1371524592775352320
8. https://x.com/TommyAndreasen/status/1590728317988048896
9. https://x.com/TommyAndreasen/status/941337768684347392

10. https://x.com/TommyAndreasen/status/850819551034044416
11. "The Jade Princess"
12. https://x.com/TommyAndreasen/status/1033281521673797633
13. https://x.com/TommyAndreasen/status/1033286058883129344
14. https://x.com/TommyAndreasen/status/1197090046454751232
15. https://x.com/TommyAndreasen/status/1532671570770116610
16. https://x.com/TommyAndreasen/status/1532812799193272323

***Ninjago* characters**

***Ninjago: Dragons Rising* characters**

ADVERTISEMENT

15+ Discussions

Join the conversation

Sign in to read what others are saying and share your thoughts.

SIGN IN

Don't have account?

Register now

MORE INFORMATION

Categories

More Fandoms

- Fantasy
- Sci-fi

Other Languages:

Community content is available under CC-BY-SAunless otherwise noted.

EXPLORE PROPERTIES

Fandom

Fanatical

GameSpot

Metacritic

TV Guide

Honest Entertainment

FOLLOW US

OVERVIEW

- What is Fandom?
- Essentials
- About
- Careers
- Press
- Contact
- Terms of Use
- Privacy Policy
- Digital Services Act
- Global Sitemap
- Local Sitemap

Cookie Preferences

COMMUNITY

Community Central

Support

Help

ADVERTISE

Media Kit

Contact

FANDOM APPS

Take your favorite fandoms with you and never miss a beat.

Ninjago Wiki is a Fandom TV Community.

VIEW FULL SITE

Villains wiki and heroes wiki

All lots lots lots lots lots lots lots lots lots lots lots lots lots lots lots lots lots lots lots lots lots school emails Gmail Pinterest bluey scholarships derby public schools southern emails group tabs Google 4,000

2,0000 Google and 59 April 2026 all lots lots lots bandit’s belt darkest au reciting and the trials against humanity/evil AUs

Wendy's Past by The Home Blue

Cartoons » Bluey Rated: T, English, Drama & Tragedy, Words: 2k+, Favs: 10, Follows: 11, Published: Mar 27, 2025

9

Call

Wendy was in her room, It was late at night and she couldn't sleep. She was remembering all the words that Bandit had told her earlier that day. How it was all her fault, That she was the cause of two deaths. After she ran out of his house she stayed in her room and cried. The guilt overwhelmed her, She kept on telling herself it was all an accident, Just a simple mistake. But even she started to question herself.

She couldn't take it anymore so she got up and walked to her window. She looked out her cigarettes and put one in her mouth. She lit it up and took a deep breath, And then let it all out. Even though she knew how unhealthy cigarettes were. Something that used to calm her down, "It's not your fault,

It's not your fault. He was just trying to make you feel guilty". She quietly told herself.

"RING"

"RING"

"RING"

Her phone was ringing on her bed, She grabbed it, It was stripe calling her. It weirded the chow chow, why would he be calling her. She answered it and put it up on her ear. "Hello". She said as she burned out her cigarette.

"...Hey wendy"

FLASHBACK

Wendy had driven stripe, Muffin, and socks to the hospital. They all got out and walked inside, Stripe walked up to the front desk, Where the female doberman was doing her paperwork. "Hi im stripe Heeler, And i'm here to pick up trixie Heeler, She's my wife". He said, The doberman looked up her name in the computer, Wendy walked to the chairs in the corner. Muffin and her sister followed her, The little heelers sat on the chairs. "Aunt Wendy, Why are we at the hospital". Muffin asked, looking up at her, "We're here to pick up your mother, And then I'm going back home". She said as she pulled out her phone, "Aw, We won't see you again, But I like hanging out with you". Muffin said looking down to ground.

Wendy started to feel bad for the young Heeler. She put her arm around the toddler. "Well...maybe we will see each other again, plus aren't you more excited to see your mum". She said trying to cheer up Muffin, which caused the white heeler to sigh. "Dad says she can't walk anymore and that it's aunt chilli's fault...Is that true aunt wendy". Muffin asked the chow chow looking up at her face. Wendy was lost for words. The only thing that the chow chow did was bring the little heeler closer to her. Socks saw this and did the same lying her head on the chow chows leg. "Your fur is so soft, aunt wendy". Muffin said, smiling up at the chow chow as she played with her fur. Socks nodded in agreement as the 2 young heelers played with the middle age dogs hair, it felt like silk. Wendy just sighed as she let the children play with her fur. Stripe then walked back to his kids and the chow chow. "What did they say"? She asked the blue heeler as he sat beside her. Socks stopped playing with her fur and jumped on her father. She rubbed her head on her fathers chest, stripe rubbed her head. Smiling at his daughter.

"Well....she cant walk anymore, I asked if there was a chance for her to recover in some way. They said it's not even likely she can even stand".

Stripe said sadly as Wendy and his children listened, Wendy felt bad for the blue heeler. But she was still annoyed she dragged him into this, causing her to hate the blue heeler a bit. "I'm sorry to hear that stripe". Wendy said to the blue heeler, Muffin heard everything. She wanted to say something, she wanted to ask about her mother. But even she knew it wasn't the right time, she just had to wait and see her mother.

Inside the main elevator trixie was in a wheelchair, her privates were covered in a black cast. To allow her pelvis to heal, even though she was ready to leave, she was still in pain. The doctors had to carry her and put her on the wheelchair, she even heard one of the nurses complain about how heavy she was. While she didnt show it she was hurt, the white heeler sighed as she looked down at her private area. "I'm sorry for what happened to you mrs heeler". Said a black and grey german shepherd behind her. The heeler looked back at the German shepherd. "Is there really no chance of me ever walking again, doctor". Trixey said as she looked down at her legs trying to move them, but it was futile, her legs didn't even feel like a part of her body. Sometimes she would try to get up and her top body would react but her lower body wouldn't, it was so strange, but something she would sadly have to get used to. "Most other doctors would tell you that they believe there is a chance for you to get up and walk again. Basically lying to you to give you hope, while it is in their good heart. They are just hopeless lies, I have seen your x rays and i'll give you the truth, there is only a 1% chance of you being able to fully walk again. You may regain a bit of control of your legs, you may be able to lift them, But that's it". The German shepherd said with no emotions.

Trixie couldn't help but whimper a bit, other doctors have already told her the same things, she was just hoping to get some sort of comfort from the german shepherd. The elevator door opened and Shaun pushed the chair holding the white heeler. Shaun made a turn around the front desk, trixies eyes lit up as she saw her husband, muffin, and socks. For a while she felt a bit of joy, but then…she saw wendy. She had seen a while back in the hospital when she first met her. She had seen her a few times before when she went to visit Bandits house. But why was she here? Stripe then turned his head to see Shaun rolling his wife towards him. His eyes popped up and he got up from the chair. Muffin and socks did the same and ran up to their mother. "Trixie"! Stripe said as he hugged his crippled wife. Trixie returned the hug, but for a second looked at the chow chow. "Mum, are you ok". Muffin said innocently looking at the weird chair she was sitting on. "Ye…No i have to be on this wheelchair from now on sweetie". Trixie said as her ears dropped behind her head. Socks whimpered as looked at her mothers pelvis. Remembering the day when her own aunt shoved a broken glass bottle in her mum's vagina. And when she tried to shove a chunk of her own mothers private parts with glass. Socks started to shake as the memories flooded in her mind. Shaun just stood there looking at how the family reacted, he then

noticed Wendy staring at her with a scowl. He assumed she was still mad from getting chilli's blood all over her face. Shaun waved to say hello at the chow chow.

But she calmed down as socks felt her mother rub the back of her head. Calming down her own daughter, Stripe stopped hugging her and got behind Trixie rolling her over to wendy. The chow chow got up and greeted the white heeler. "How are you doing trixie?". Wendy asked her, looking concerned for the white heeler. Trixie shook the chows chow's hand trying not to look weirded out. "I…..I've been better". Trixie said as stripe got behind her and held trixies wheelchair handles. "C'mon honey, we should go home, I got the boss to give me a week off so I can be with you". Stripe said as the blue heeler turned the white heeler around and began to head towards the exit, Wendy and Stripe's kids followed behind the couple. "I'm fucking exhausted". Wendy said as she passed by the black and white german shepherd giving him a tired side eye.

Shaun just stood there as he watched the heelers and chow chow leave the building.

Stripe drove his car up the hill that Wendy lived on, the blue heeler passed his brother's house and parked in front of Wendy's house. The chow chow got out of the vehicle and began to head towards her blue house. She didn't even bother to say goodbye. "Goodbye aunt wendy". She then turned her head around to see muffin waving at her from the backseat, Wendy raised her eyebrow. But waved back as stripe began to drive back downhill not really wanting to stay near his brother's house. And now she was all alone, she naturally looked around. "I should take a shower". She said to herself as she turned around and walked into her home.

Stripe parked his car in front of his house, stripe, muffin and socks got out of the car. The 2 kids followed their father as he walked towards the passenger seat and opened the door he then walked to the rear of his car getting Trixies wheelchair. When he took it out he closed the rear door and walked back to Trixie by the passenger seat. He struggled to get the wheelchair open, trying to extend it. "How the bloody heck does this work". He said out loud as muffin just pushed a button on the side of the wheelchair as it automatically opened. "Thanks muffles". Stripe said as he placed the wheelchair down on its wheels. He then carried trixie up from the seat and placed her on the wheelchair. "Dad why is mum in a wheelchair now"? Muffin asked as her father pushed her mother towards their house. "Well….it's complicated but it's just the way it is now muffin". Stripe said as he paused and went up to the door and unlocked it with his key. He opened it and walked back to his crippled wife to push her in their house.

"Will you ever walk again mum"? Muffin questioned the white heeler, trixie ears just plopped down as she looked away from her daughter. "The doctor said I only have a 1 percent chance of walking again, and that I may be able to regain control of my legs and lift them up, But that's it…..nothing more". She said as she looked back at her daughter, Muffin felt bad for asking. She got up on the wheelchair and held her hand. Socks did the same on the other side of the wheelchair. "I'm sorry for asking mum". Muffin said as she sighed, Trixie just played with her ears comforting her child. "You've been quiet for a while, socks". The white heeler said as she petted her daughter, socks just sighed and looked away. Trixie gave her youngest a worried look, "socks" she said again, putting both of her hands on her head. The blue heeler just whimpered as she shook her head.

Trixie pulled her up towards her chest giving her youngest child a hug. "You poor thing". The white heeler said as she put her child under her chin. "She must be traumatized for what Chilli did to her". Stripe said out loud, as he also began to pet his kid. "I'll Make sure she will go see a child psychologist soon". Stripe said out loud, he then looked down at Muffin. "Muffy I'm gonna take your mum upstairs you kids go on ahead and go to the playroom. "Um… ok dad, Cmon socks let's go play". Muffin said to her sister, socks did as she was told and jumped up her mum landing on the carpet, the 2 sisters ran upstairs. For a moment both of the adults smiled as they saw their kids run up the stairs, but their smiles went away. When the 2 kids footsteps couldn't be heard anymore. Stripe walked his wife towards the stairs; he then walked in front of her and used his hands to carry his wife by her bottom with one hand and her useless legs with the other.

"We're gonna have to get one of those slide machines old people use to help you get upstairs trix". He said smiling down at his wife, but something was off, he noticed her avoiding eye contact with him and looking worried. "Are you ok honey"? He asked her as he made it up the stairs he made a turn and headed towards their room. "I-I….how did you end up taking Wendy on a ride to the hospital"? She asked her husband with a worried look, stripe assumed that his wife had began to have ideas of what the chow chow was doing with him. But instead of being defensive he simply just told her the truth. "It's a long story I'll tell you when we get to our room". Stripe said looking a bit shameful, he then made a turn to their room and gently placed his wife on the front of the bed. She laid her back on the pillow stripe just sat on the edge of the bed in front of his wife looking at the ground, trying to find his words, as trixie continued to get worried.

….

"I….Kinda made a scene to be honest….I was flat out drunk the day of chilli's funeral and drove to the spot with muffin, I'm surprised that I didn't even get caught by the police, I ended up crashing into the fence of the grave yard,

and after that I got into a fight with my brother and even my dad. I was just so depressed that you wouldn't be able to walk anymore. I just started drinking, and I even left socks at a daycare for 2 days". He said as he scratched his neck feeling embarrassed.

"What were you thinking". Trixie said as she slapped her husband on the cheek, surprising Stripe. "I'm the one that should be suffering your the one that should be making sure that our children are OK, this is unacceptable". The white heeler said scolding her husband. "I'm sorry it wasn't my intention". Stripe said looking at his wife, as she still looked at him with disappointment. "It's already hard that I can't walk, now its all up to you to take care of this family". Trixie said putting her hand on her husband's knee, stripe moved up on the bed and hugged his crippled wife. "We never should have gone and visited My brothers wife. To be honest I shouldn't have left you there all alone. Maybe if I was there I could have at least…intervened". Stripe said as he brought his wife closer to his body, sniffing the back of her neck as he looked at her back with tired eyes.

Trixie held her husband's hands, feeling a bit of comfort. She thought about what he said, and in reality it wasn't his fault but more of the innocence of her child socks. For causing Chilli to have a mood swing. But even then her kid suffered worst, since she suspects socks might be traumatized for life. The white heelers eyes began to feel heavy as her breathing began to slow down. So did stripes, soon they were both sleeping, not knowing what the future had hold for them.

One month later

"Hello" Wendy said as she burned out her cigarette "stripe how did you get my number" she questioned the blue heeler, but he ignored her question. "I need your help mate". He asked the chow chow, Wendy raised an eyebrow. "In what"? She asked him, as she waited for an answer.

"Look I know I was kinda being an ass a while back to you, but I need your help in taking care of trixie and my kids. I would've have asked Bandit….but you know what I did, so he is out of the picture. And I'm willing to pay you a good amount, plus you don't have to be there all day. Just enough yo make sure the kids and my wife are doing fine. And to help trixie with whatever she needs since….she cant walk". Stripe asked waiting for a response, Wendy thought about for a second. On one hand it would be nice to work and get a bit more cash, but on the other hand she didn't like how stripe treated her. And also she still had to take care of Judo since she just got here.

"Well….Just as long as judo can come with me to your house, I guess that's fine…. But if something comes up I'll let you know. Just don't be an asshole".

Wendy said furrowing her eyes. "Look I know I was being a dick, but I was really fucked up. There's no excuse to be honest. But let me know if anything comes up". Stripe said as Wendy looked down at her cigarette packet and took one out. She lit it up and took a breath of smoke. "Fine", she said, not really caring.

....

"You know I do think I remember you from somewhere". Stripe said as Wendy raised an eyebrow.

"I think we meet at a McDonald's"

End of chapter 1

Chapter 1: Ouch

Chapter 1

Tired

On a Friday afternoon, Bandit was, unfortunately, playing tickle crab with his two kids. Right now he was running away from them in the kitchen.

"You'll never catch you cheeky tickle Crabs," he said as he got on the table with a broom

Tickle, Tickle, Tickle. Said Bingo and Bluey

Bandit used the Brush of the broom to shove his Kids. Bandit then jumped off the table and ran to the small food cabinet and hid from his Kids. Chilli walked near the Cabinet drinking a Juice Box. The kids came into the scene still playing Tickle Crab. Looking for their Father.

"Hey kids, I think you should check that Cabinet. For some reason I think your Dad is in it". Chilli suggested

The kids ignored her and started to walk to the kitchen again. Chilli, Annoyed by their weird decision. Opened the Cabinet Door revealing Bandit eating a bag of Cheese Chips

"Ah Biscuits," He said as he got out and ran into the living room.

Chilli And the kids ran after Bandit. Chilli tackled him to the ground And held his arms up. Allowing her kids to torture him with Tickles.

"AAAAAHHHHHH NO PLEASE. NOT THE TICKLE CRABS". He said, bursting his laughter out.

Discover more

Forum & Chat Providers

Anime & Manga

Fiction writing tools

"Tickle, Tickle, Tickle". Said the children

Even though Bandit was having fun. Well not really he hated Tickle Crab. He was losing his Breath And gasping for air. The constant tickling, Was starting to get to him.

"GUYS PLEASE, HAHAHAHAHAHAH. I CAN'T BREATH PLEASE". Bandit cried.

"Aww, big Dog says he wants more" Said Chilli still holding him.

GUYS FOR REAL I CAN'T. HAHAHAHA. Bandit was wheezing at this point.

While his kids started tickling his feet. Bandit accidentally swung his Foot too hard and accidentally hit Bluey in her face. Making her hit the ground on the back of her Head.

"AAAAAAHHHHH, MY HEAD". cried Bluey as tears started to run down her face.

"BLUEY" yelled Bingo and Chilli as they both went to comfort her. Bandit was on the floor, Trying to catch his breath. When he did, he was shocked to see his daughter crying.

"Huff...Huff..what happened to Bluey?" He panted.

"You Kicked her in the face, Bandit. Why did you do that," she said, giving him her angry face.

"What, it wasn't my fault, I told you I couldn't breathe. And why were you holding me down" He defended himself

"I was just playing around Bandit. You Didn't Have to use your Brute strength on her." She said,

Discover more

"And you could have stopped holding me down. When I told you, But you didn't". Bandit said.

Bandit got up And went to try and comfort his daughter. But Chilli got up and stopped him from getting close. Giving him a stern look. While Bingo was trying to comfort her crying sister.

"Look she's not in a good mood, So get out of here". She said

Bandit was shocked by her reaction. He wanted to argue, But it would just make the situation worse. He was pissed off at what his wife was doing, But he complied.

"We're gonna talk about this later. You don't have the right to tell me to piss off. When my daughter is in pain". Bandit said, walking to his Bedroom.

LATER THAT NIGHT

Bandit was in the Bed, Still mad from what Chilli had said. He wanted to see how his daughter was doing. But like always he just listened to her whenever she thought she was right. It wasn't his fault, They just didn't listen to him.

creak*

Chilli entered the bedroom. Bandit moved a bit to the Right, To give her space.

"You didn't have to kick in the face Bandit. You could have broken her skull" She said

"It was not my fault Chilli, And you know it if you just didn't Hold me down. I could have just run away. And Bluey didn't have to get hurt" Bandit said, trying to keep his cool.

"Plus it was your turn to play with the kids. I Was Supposed to Watch the Cricket Today". He added.

"You Know I Can't play tickle crab. Becau-"

"Yeah, yeah because of Brandy. Look I get that, But you have to Understand that sometimes you have to Suck it up. You couldn't handle all the Harmful games. I had to Play with the kids". Bandit said

"Psh, I play with the Kids just as much as you do Bandit". Chilli said.

"Yeah, But you couldn't handle being a sheepdog, Or being hit by a bunch of stupid toys, Or even just being tickled". Stated Bandit.

"I can do it all Bandit, except tickle crab". She said as she lay to the side ready to go to sleep.

…

"Oh really" Bandit put the *I have to go tomorrow for the whole day. And you have to take care of the kids the whole day excuse paper* (They couldn't find a better name for it) And it just happened to be Bandit's turn.

Oh, no not the Excuse paper" Chilli said rolling over the Bed to see a smiling Bandit.

"What's the occasion, Bandit"

"Well, it's been a While, Since me and Guys. Went out on a fishing trip For Barras. And tomorrow Is supposed to be a Sunny day, Plus you said you can play Any Games the kids want. So I want you to Feel what I Feel on a daily basis".

Chilli gave him a scowl

"Unless you think you can't handle it, Chilli?"

"Oh please, I can handle it all day,'' Chilli said. It wasn't her first time taking care of the kids alone. So how different could it be?

"Without, Getting angry at them. Or having to call me"? He said.

Discover more

Comic book subscriptions

Anime merchandise

Cartoons

"I won't even text you for the whole day," She said grinning.

"Alright then, I'll just call the boys" Bandit took out his phone and first called Patrick.

ring*

ring*

ring*

"Hey, Patrick. I was wondering if you wanted to go Fishing For Barras tomorrow in the City with me".

....

"Why can't you go Patrick"?

"Oh Shark accident, Well I hope you feel better mate. I'll talk to you later"

Beep*

He then called his brother Stripe.

ring*

ring*

ring*

"Hey brother, I was wondering if you wanted to go fishing with me tomorrow. Chilli is gonna take care of the kids all day".

"Oh Cool, let me just talk to her about it".

Bandit put the call on mute.

"Hey Chilli, Brad, And Frisky are visiting tomorrow. And stripe wanted to know if You, Trixie, And Frisk. Could take care of the Kids tomorrow in the house".

"Yeah that's ok, At Least I'll be getting more help". She said

"Good, ok they can come tomorrow. And make sure to bring a few Beers. Just in case we don't catch anything. I'll see you guys at 8 in the morning". Bandit hung up

8:00 IN THE MORNING

Stripe and Bandit were outside of the house. Waiting for Their brother Rad, To pull up with his huge Truck.

"Did Rad tell you he was also bringing his kid," Stripe said, putting on a hat?

"What, Rad never said anything about having a kid. When did that happen"? Bandit said also putting on his hat

"Well about 12 months ago after the wedding. Rad and Frisky got…Well you know, they got a little Frisky. And they forgot to use protection, So 9 months later. Josh is born". Stripe explained.

"Oh, that's why he hasn't called me for 9 months. Probably too busy with the kid.".

"BEEP BEEP" Rad's Truck came up the Hill And parked right on the Sidewalk. Not caring that his car was breaking the Cement.

"Sigh how am I gonna explain that to the homeowner?" bandit said. Covering his eyes.

Rad and Frisky got out of the car. However, they both had Bags under their eyes. Rad looked like he hadn't slept in days. While Frisky looked like a tired sloth. She was holding their Baby, a little red Heeler, with blue legs. Covered with blankets. Bandit and Stripe greeted their brother.

Hey brother, how's it going? Didn't know you had a kid. How's the little guy? Bandit said, shaking his Hand.

"Oh, you know how it is, lacking SLEEP. And not being able to SLEEP enough". Rad said

"Yeah that always happens. Just wait till they're three though". Stripe and Bandit said in unison.

Frisky went up to the door and knocked on it. Chilli opened the door, and Trixie went up to greet her.

"Hi Frisky, nice to meet you, I'm Stripe's wife, My name is Trixie". She greeted her.

"Hello stripes wife, My name is Fwisky and this is Timmy my son". She said half awake, showing her son.

"You had a kid, Why didn't you tell me"? Chilli Asked

"I'm sorry but Johnny and I have to take a little Nap, Nap. If that's ok". Frisky said almost falling to the ground.

"Y-yeah just go to the kids roo-"

"Ok thanks" Frisky said as she walked to the stairs.

"What's up with her?" Trixie asked.

"My guess is the baby, you know how it was for the first year" Chilli said.

"Don't remind me"

"Mum, why is Aunt Frisky sleeping in my bed"? Bluey said while walking up to her mum.

"She's a little tired sweety, Let's just go and say bye to your dad". Chilli said.

Bandit and his brothers, Were done loading everything in the Truck.

"Alright that's everything, Are you ready to drive Rad"? Bandit said.

Rad was sleeping on the ground, Taking a bit of a Dirt nap.

I'll put him in the Back of the seats, Just make sure we have everything. Stripe said, struggling to pull his older Brother. Bandit checked on the back of the Truck. Making sure he had everything. He then saw his wife, And kid walking up to him

"Alright honey, Well be back by 8" He gave her a kiss on the mouth. And then looked down at Bluey, She looked a little scared of him. He got to her eye level.

"Hey sport, I know what I did yesterday was wrong. But hope you could forgive me" He said, holding her shoulder.

"It's ok Dad, And I'm sorry, That I tickled you too hard. I won't play tickle crab ever again" She said, hugging him.

"That's good to hear mate, But you Mum, And Aunt are gonna play whatever you kids want. For the whole day while we're out. Bandit said, looking up at Chilli.

"Except tickle crab," She said.

"Yup, Anything But Tickle Crab. Got that man". Bandit said Booping his daughter in the nose, She giggled.

Bandit Got inside the Truck where His two Brothers were waiting. Stripe was on the driver's side, And Bandit was on the passenger side. Stripe hit the horn as he sped away from the Heeler house.

"I hope we catch some barras, remember when. Fished all the time when we were kids, Stripe". Bandit said as he got comfy in his chair.

"Yeah, when we didn't have kids. And have to hear them say, way, wah, wa-"

"DENNIS, WHERE'S THE BOTTLE FRISKY. WE HAVE WORK IN THE MORNING". yelled Rad, As he held Stripe by his neck a bit too hard. making him drive worse than a teenager.

"STRIPE, WATCH OUT FOR THAT OLD LADY"

end of chapter 1

Chapter 2: Games

Games

After driving for about 40 minutes the boys made it to the fishing spot. They all got off and grabbed their rods and Baits. And headed down to the river. Where a metallic small fence was located where they could rest their rods.

"Alright guys, Patrick couldn't join us because of a shark attack. But he did say that this was the best spot to fish for barras". Bandit said.

"Do you think the Granny will be ok? I mean we did hit her good" Stripe said

"At least she will be SLEEPING with the fishes". Rad added

"Hahahahaha, your Funny brother" Stripe and Bandit said, In unison.

When they reached the fishing spot. They saw two Chow Chows, Relaxing on folding Chairs. They were tanning And had cucumbers on their eyes. They were in the guy's fishing Spot.

"Hey, is it ok if we fish near you?" Bandit asked.

"What the Bandit is that you"? It was Wendy, Bandits' neighbor.

"Hey there, Bluey's dad," said Judo. She was Wendy's daughter.

"Oh hey wendy, weird seeing you here. My and the guys were wondering if we could fish near you. If it's ok"? Bandit questioned

"That's that's fine, just make sure you keep the fish away from us. I don't want anything slimy near me". She said putting her cucumber back on her eyes.

" *Sigh*If I had a dollar for every time Chilli said that to me".

"What's wrong with him, Bluey's dad". Judo pointed at a sleeping Rad on the ground.

"hmmm, Let me guess, He just had a kid"? Wendy said

"Yup!" Said the non-sleeping Brothers.

BACK AT THE HEELER HOUSE

Chilli and Trixie were in the living room. Watching the (one night under the shining stars, series finale).

"Oh my god, they broke up. And he married her sister". Trixie said.

"What's wrong with that? The sister was an asshole. And treated the little sister horribly". Chilli said while eating some Cheese Chips.

"I mean yeah, But she had her reasons. Plus the big sister was mentally sick". Trixie said, taking a handful of chips and putting it in her mouth.

"But you gotta admit, That dog was smoking hot. I loved his outfit, 'Don't you think Trixie'. Chilli said.

"Nah but he was kinda Fat don't you think," Trixie said as she finished another bowl of Chips.

All chilli did was eye her stomach. And wonder how she had so much space in there. The kids came running into the room, Wanting to play with their Mums.

"Mum we're Bored," Said Muffin, she was Trixie's kid.

"Yeah, Can we play something fun"? Bingo said.

"Why weren't you kids on your tablets? Chilli asked

Because they ran out of charge Mum. Can you please play with us? Bluey whined

"C'mon Chilli, let's just charge the tablets. And play with them for a while". Trixie said

They got up and went to charge the kid's tablet. So that when they were done playing games. The kids would just play with them. And they would go back to watching tv.

"Alright kids, what do you want to play?" Chilli said

They walked outside and into the backyard. Near the fish pond. Socks came up to them holding a rope. And dropped it in between them.

"TUG OF WAR," the four girls said

"Tug of War? Psh this game is too easy. Ain't that right Trix". Chili said.

"I don't know, don't you think we should let them win. I mean they're just kids, Chilli". Trixie replied.

"I know, but I wanna give them a challenge. They're half our size, It's basically two against two….."

Trixie gave Chili a confused look. While Trixie was trying to understand what the Red Heeler said. Muffin was looking at the fish pond, An idea sparked in her head.

"Bluey, Bingo, Socks. I have an idea, Let's pull the rope really hawd. And when They pull hard And then let go". Muffin explained

"Why, though," Bingo said.

"Just do it, You'll see. HeheHehe" Muffin giggled.

"Alright let's play kids, But I'm gonna be honest with you. We're not gonna hold back. So give us your worst". Chilli said, Nugging Trixie.

The kids picked up the end of the rope. The adults did the same And got into position. They all started to count down.

3

2

1

"GO"

They all pulled on the rope. The kids were surprisingly strong. Making Chilli, And Trixie almost fall over. They started to pull back, But the kids pulled harder. Muffin opened her eyes. And saw that her mum And Aunt were starting to move back near the pond. When they got close, All she yelled was.

"LET GO"

All the kids let go of the rope. Chilli and Trixie, we're still pulling, making them stumble backward. And fall onto the fishpond. All the kids laughed at them. While Chilli fell in the water, Trixie fell on a rock. Right on her back, Hurting her spine.

"MY BACK" Trixie yelled.

Chilli stood up And picked Trixie up by her hand. Trixie was in pain, But she was mostly angry right now.

"Who said it, Who yelled to let go of the Rope". Trixie yelled

....

"Oh none of you wanna talk, Well listen. If none of you Brats tell me who said it. I'm gonna break your TABLETS".

All the kids pointed at Muffin, Even muffin pointed at herself. out of fear that her tablet was gonna get destroyed.

"MUFFIN, You are going to the Corner for 30 MINUTES.

Trixie grabbed Muffin by her arm. And took her inside the house. Leaving Chilli, And the rest of the kids a bit shocked by her reaction.

"Did you Girls know about this"? Chili questioned.

"Noooooooooo," The girls said in unison. Looking away from her. Chili scowled at them.

Back At The River.

While the Brothers, Waited for the fish to bite, They were talking about Patrick's legs. They Might have to be amputated, Because of the shark attack. Judo and Wendy continued to tan in the hot Australian sun. And that's when Judo had a realization.

"Mum, why are we sunbathing? If we have Fur". Judo said, taking the cucumbers out of her eyes.

"Because Judo we are here for plot convenience. So at any time we will affect the plot of the story". Wendy explained.

"Oh right, Hey mum, is it ok if I grab a soda? From the red cooler". Judo said activating her plot convenience.

"Sure thing, But remember one soda and no more. I don't want you to have a sugar Rush". Wendy said.

Judo got up and opened the red cooler. And took out a nice cold dog cola. And took a sip of it. It tasted even better on a hot day. But then after a while, Judo got bored. And saw that Bluey's dad was fishing. She never fished

before, But she always wanted to try it. But her mum never let her, Because the fish were too slimy for her. But since her mum was relaxing right now. She saw an opportunity, To try it with Bluey's dad.

"Do you guys think I should call him And ask to see how he's doing? Or should I just wa-"

"Excuse me, Bluey's dad, But I was wondering. If it's ok to fish with you all".

"Oh, you want to fish with us, I thought your mum didn't allow it". Bandit asked. "Yeah but I've never tried it, And I want to see if it's fun," Judo said.

"Oi How about this? I'll give you my rod. And you let me SLEEP on your bed chair". Rad offered her.

"Deal," she said. Rad got up from his chair And gave Judo his fishing rod. Rad then walked up to Judo's bed chair. And laid on it, instantly having a deep sleep.

"Did you finish, The soda Judo"? Wendy said, with the cucumber slices in her eyes.

"SSSSSSNNNNNOOOORRREEEEEEE"

"At least it's not a Sugar Rush"

After Bandit explained To judo how to use the spinning reel. She tried doing it by herself, But she barely got 10 feet away from the shore.

"Awww, I wanted it to go farther" Judo complained as she started to reel in the bait.

"Do you think she's gonna catch anything"? Bandit asked his Younger Brother.

"Nah come on mate, We haven't caught anything for almost an hour how is sh-".

"I CAUGHT SOMETHING" yelled Judo as she was fighting the fish. And by the look of it, the fish was winning.

"Oh, crap Bandit grabs the net it looks like a 10-pounder". Stripe said as he almost fell off his chair.

Bandit grabbed his net and used it to snatch the fish. He lifted from the water over the metal rail. And onto the Grass, it was about 36 inches.

"Oh my goodness it's big, What type of fish is it Bluey's dad"? Judo asked him

"That there is a barramundi, Basically the coolest fish in Australia. And you caught it Judo High five". Bandit gave her a high five. Judo was happy, She never knew fishing would be so fun.

"You're a good fisherman, you know". Stripe complimented her.

While judo, stripe, and Bandit we're still obsessing over the fish. On the other side of the fishing spot. Was wendy talking to a sleeping Rad?

"So yeah, you have to go visit your father next week. I mean it's not permanent, Things just happen honey".

"SSSSSSNNNNNOOORRRRREEE"

"You know you don't snore, As much as you used to".

(A/N: Don't like leaving these here. But here we are. I made a reference from another fanfic. Shout out to riverwater46).

1 site

"*Lego Batman (S2) Episode 7: Endgame Part Two*" is the true, high-stakes final chapter of Jack Filmer's LEGO Batman Series Season 2. It brings the long-running confrontation between ***Bruce Wayne*** and ***Hush***to a dramatic and emotional conclusion.

The breakdown of the key plot points and character fates from this specific finale includes:

The Breakdown of the Finale

- ***The Climax of the Hush Arc***: The episode centers heavily around Bruce Wayne being captured by Hush. Hush reveals a massive plot to detonate eight bombs hidden across Gotham City. This forces Bruce to break free and push past his emotional isolation to stop the total destruction of his home.

- ***The Tragedy of Harvey Dent***: In a darker twist for the stop-motion series, Hush successfully breaks Harvey Dent's psyche by exposing Bruce Wayne's secret financial manipulations behind his campaign. This results in Dent playing a fatal game of chance using his coin against Tim Drake (the new Robin) before tragically taking his own life.
- ***The Nightfall Project***: With Gotham being actively evacuated by the GCPD, Lucius Fox provides Bruce with a powerful new tactical suit code-named the *Nightfall Project*. This upgrade gives Batman the necessary edge to save Alfred and Barbara Gordon from captivity and begin tracking down the bombs.
- ***The Joker's Return***: The episode concludes with a major teaser showing the Joker making a sudden appearance, setting up the narrative groundwork for the creator's next iteration, *Legacy of the Dark Knight*.

Would you like to analyze how this finale sets up the events of ***Legacy of the Dark Knight***, or are you looking for the ***voice cast*** credits for this final episode?

Lego Batman (S2) Episode 7: Endgame Part Two

In the second part of the Batman finale, Hush finally has Bruce in his clutches. With time running out and the entire city on the line, Bruce must become the he...

www.youtube.com

You said: The Joker's Return: The episode concludes with a major teaser showing the Joker making a sudden appearance in endgame part 2

The Joker's Return: The episode concludes with a major teaser showing the Joker making a sudden appearance in endgame part 2

June 11, 2026

7 sites

The Joker's sudden return at the end of **"*Endgame Part Two*"** is designed as a massive tonal shift that signals the end of Hush's psychological chess matches and the return of chaotic escalation. [1]

This specific teaser sets up the foundational narrative for the follow-up project, ***Legacy of the Dark Knight***, in several ways: [1, 2]

Shifting the Threat from Tactical to Chaotic

- ***The Contrast with Hush***: While Season 2 focuses on Hush's deeply personal, calculated revenge against Bruce Wayne, the Joker's teaser introduces unpredictable, mass-scale terror.
- ***Exploiting a Broken Batman***: The teaser highlights a Batman who is emotionally and physically exhausted after dealing with the death of Harvey

Dent and the mass evacuation of Gotham. The Joker capitalizes on this specific vulnerability. [1, 2]

Laying the Groundwork for "Legacy of the Dark Knight"

- ***The Evolution of the Rogue***: The *Endgame* teaser sets up the multi-layered version of the Clown Prince of Crime seen in the sequel project. [1, 2]
- ***Cinematic Tributes***: The narrative transition takes inspiration from classic cinematic eras. It bridges the character's ruthless mob-hitman origins (reminiscent of the 1989 Jack Nicholson depiction) with the deeply anarchic, scarred threat that mimics the Heath Ledger *Dark Knight* era. [1, 2, 3]
- ***The Smilex Gas Threat***: The teaser acts as a direct prologue to his upcoming plots in the sequel, where he aggressively targets Gotham's infrastructure and public events, such as his attack on the Flugelheim Art Gallery and the hijacking of the Gotham parade with lethal Smilex gas. [1, 2, 3, 4]

Would you like to take a closer look at the ***specific comic book storylines*** that inspired this transition, or do you want to explore the ***gameplay levels*** where you face the Joker in *Legacy of the Dark Knight*? [1]

LEGO Batman Legacy of the Dark Knight: Lvl 13 The Joker STORY - HTG

This video is about playing through level 13, titled "The Joker," in the game LEGO Batman Legacy of the Dark Knight. The level is broken down into subsections a...

4m

YouTube·HappyThumbsGaming

How Lego Batman Legacy of the Dark Knight Mixed Movies Together - Variety

Joker, for example, we've seen him over decades of different media. Our Joker will begin on in the alleyways of Gotham City working for Carmine Falcone. He will...

Variety

Lego Batman (S2) Episode 7: Endgame Part Two

so near that's the time. you must keep on trying smile what's the use of crying. you'll find That life is still worthwhile. if you just smile.

15:16

YouTube·Jack Filmer

Joker (Lego Batman: Legacy of the Dark Knight) | Villains Wiki | Fandom

What doesn't kill you, simply makes you... stranger. The Joker after gaining his scars. The Joker referencing his Burton and Schumacherverse self. Wait' till th...

Villains Wiki

Joker | LEGO Batman: Legacy of the Dark Knight Wiki

Flugelheim. After receiving back-alley surgery, leaving him with a fixed grin, Jack becomes the Joker, and his henchmen rebrand accordingly. The Joker breaks in...

Fandom

Lego Batman: Legacy of The Dark Knight: Ep. 7: Flugelhiem: The Joker ...

the Joker is going to hijack Gotham's bsentennial parade the route isn't far from here surely I can take a little shortcut just this once well I guess this uh o...

01:19:54

YouTube·Last Frontier Bricks

LEGO Batman Legacy of the Dark Knight Part 9 Joker Attacks Gotham Parade ...

The Joker plans to hijack Gotham's bicentennial parade. He is active in old Gotham west and intends to televise his actions. The Joker announces he is giving aw...

13:53

YouTube·deathmule

Joker | LEGO Batman: Legacy of the Dark Knight Wiki | Fandom

Trivia * As the Joker, he resembles the versions portrayed by Jack Nicholson and Heath Ledger in the 1989 Batman film and The Dark Knight, respectively. While u...

Fandom

You said: This video serves as the emotional and dramatic conclusion to the Lego Batman series. It follows Batman and his allies as they race to Wayne Tower to stop the Joker's final, destructive plan.Key Highlights of the Finale:•The Battle at Wayne Tower (13:17 - 21:00): The Joker orchestrates a sadistic game, forcing Batman to watch as he threatens his friends, including Commissioner Gordon, Harvey Dent, and Lucius Fox. The situation turns tragic when Lucius Fox is killed (17:29 - 18:00) and Robin (Dick Grayson) is mortally wounded (21:30 - 21:47).•The Aftermath (22:00 - 25:00): The US Army arrives to arrest the Joker, who is then taken into custody to be sent to a maximum-security prison (23:19 - 23:35). Batman is left to mourn the devastating loss of Dick Grayson, blaming himself for

bringing a young person into his dangerous life (25:10 - 26:00).•A New Beginning (26:03 - 27:10): Jim Gordon is appointed as the new Commissioner of Gotham. He and Batman agree to rebuild the force and work together to clean up the city, establishing a new symbol of hope amidst the wreckage left by the Joker.

This video serves as the emotional and dramatic conclusion to the Lego Batman series. It follows Batman and his allies as they race to Wayne Tower to stop the Joker's final, destructive plan.Key Highlights of the Finale:•The Battle at Wayne Tower (13:17 - 21:00): The Joker orchestrates a sadistic game, forcing Batman to watch as he threatens his friends, including Commissioner Gordon, Harvey Dent, and Lucius Fox. The situation turns tragic when Lucius Fox is killed (17:29 - 18:00) and Robin (Dick Grayson) is mortally wounded (21:30 - 21:47).•The Aftermath (22:00 - 25:00): The US Army arrives to arrest the Joker, who is then taken into custody to be sent to a maximum-security prison (23:19 - 23:35). Batman is left to mourn the devastating loss of Dick Grayson, blaming himself for bringing a young person into his dangerous life (25:10 - 26:00).•A New Beginning (26:03 - 27:10): Jim Gordon is appointed as the new Commissioner of Gotham. He and Batman agree to rebuild the force and work together to clean up the city, establishing a new symbol of hope amidst the wreckage left by the Joker.

June 14, 2026

The video described is the absolute emotional peak of the series, shifting from the *Endgame* arc into a brutal, final confrontation with the Joker that permanently alters Team Batman.

The Consequences of the Wayne Tower Battle

- ***The Cost of the Joker's Game***: Unlike the calculated psychological torture from Hush, the Joker’s game at Wayne Tower is pure sadism, targeting Batman's foundational support system by putting his closest allies in direct, lethal peril.
- ***The Death of selina kyle***: Losing Lucius removes Batman's primary technical genius and corporate ally, leaving Wayne Enterprises and Batman's technological supply chain deeply fractured.
- ***The Fall of Dick Grayson***: The mortal wounding of Dick Grayson represents Batman's ultimate failure as a mentor, echoing his worst fears about the dangers of bringing youth into his crusade and driving him into profound self-blame.

The Power Vacuum and Reconstruction

- ***Military Intervention***: The arrival of the US Army to secure the Joker highlights that Gotham’s local infrastructure completely collapsed under the weight of the Joker's final plot, requiring federal containment.
- ***A Fractured Partnership***: With the rise of Jim Gordon as the new Commissioner, the series ends on a bittersweet note of resilience—focusing on rebuilding a clean police force from the ground up despite staggering personal losses.

Would you like to explore how these specific, tragic losses compare to classic comic arcs like ***"A Death in the Family,"*** or do you want to look into the ***behind-the-scenes production*** of how these intense dramatic scenes were animated?

You said: This video serves as the emotional and dramatic conclusion to the Lego Batman series. It follows Batman and his allies as they race to Wayne Tower to stop the Joker's final, destructive plan.Key Highlights of the Finale:•The Battle at

Wayne Tower (13:17 - 21:00): The Joker orchestrates a sadistic game, forcing Batman to watch as he threatens his friends, including Commissioner Gordon, Harvey Dent, and Lucius Fox. The situation turns tragic when Lucius Fox is killed (17:29 - 18:00) and Robin (Dick Grayson) is mortally wounded (21:30 - 21:47).•The Aftermath (22:00 - 25:00): The US Army arrives to arrest the Joker, who is then taken into custody to be sent to a maximum-security prison (23:19 - 23:35). Batman is left to mourn the devastating loss of Dick Grayson, blaming himself for bringing a young person into his dangerous life (25:10 - 26:00).•A New Beginning (26:03 - 27:10): Jim Gordon is appointed as the new Commissioner of Gotham. He and Batman agree to rebuild the force and work together to clean up the city, establishing a new symbol of hope amidst the wreckage left by the Joker. city reborn part 2 one year ago

This video serves as the emotional and dramatic conclusion to the Lego Batman series. It follows Batman and his allies as they race to Wayne Tower to stop the Joker's final, destructive plan.Key Highlights of the Finale:•The Battle at Wayne Tower (13:17 - 21:00): The Joker orchestrates a sadistic game, forcing Batman to watch as he threatens his friends, including Commissioner Gordon, Harvey Dent, and Lucius Fox. The situation turns tragic when catwoman is killed (17:29 - 18:00) and Robin (Dick Grayson) is mortally wounded (21:30 - 21:47).•The Aftermath (22:00 - 25:00): The US Army arrives to arrest the Joker, who is then taken into custody to be sent to a maximum-security prison (23:19 - 23:35). Batman is left to mourn the devastating loss of Dick Grayson, blaming himself for bringing a young person into his dangerous life (25:10 - 26:00).•A New Beginning (26:03 - 27:10): Jim Gordon is appointed as the new Commissioner of Gotham. He and Batman agree to rebuild the force and work together to clean up the city, establishing a new symbol of hope amidst the wreckage left by the Joker. city reborn part 2 one year ago

June 14, 2026

This video overview captures the complete narrative resolution of **"*City Reborn: Part Two,*"** which Jack Filmer released as the massive, movie-length finale to his original LEGO Batman brickfilm universe.

Narrative Analysis of "City Reborn: Part Two"

- ***The Ultimate Price of the Crusade***: By killing Lucius Fox and mortally wounding Dick Grayson, the Joker achieves his ultimate goal: he completely strips Bruce Wayne of his dual safety nets (his corporate/tech mastermind and his surrogate family).
- ***The Paradox of Jim Gordon***: Jim Gordon ascending to Commissioner in the wreckage of the Joker's attack mirrors classic comic conclusions like *The Dark Knight*. The "New Beginning" is heavily bittersweet, as Batman is forced to rely on institutional rebuilding because his independent, vigilante network has been completely shattered.
- ***The "One Year Ago" Timeline Loop***: This finale brings the entire series narrative completely full circle. The devastating loss of Dick Grayson at the hands of the Joker in this climax is the exact tragic event that Bruce Wayne is mourning at the very beginning of Season 2 ("New Beginnings"), which took place "one year later."

Are you looking to find the ***behind-the-scenes community reaction*** to how Jack Filmer tied these seasons together, or do you want to explore his follow-up project, ***Legacy of the Dark Knight***?

You said: why didn’t Jack filmer release knightfall

why didn’t Jack filmer release knightfall

June 17, 2026

3 sites

Jack Filmer did not release a standalone *Knightfall* brickfilm project because ***he chose to integrate the concept directly into his final Season 2 episodes and pivot toward his major follow-up project, "Legacy of the Dark Knight".*** [1]

Rather than adapting the entire comic book arc of Bane breaking Batman's back, he used the "Knightfall" namesake as a thematic element within his own storyline.

Why a Standalone Knightfall Season Was Skipped

- ***The "Nightfall Project" Transition:*** Instead of a full *Knightfall* storyline, Jack Filmer utilized the concept as a tactical upgrade. In the *Endgame* finale, Lucius Fox presents Bruce Wayne with a high-tech tactical suit code-named the ***Nightfall Project***, which Bruce uses to face Hush and the Joker. [1]
- ***Storyline Resolution:*** The emotional and narrative beats that usually occupy a dark, multi-part arc—such as Batman being pushed past his absolute mental and physical limits—were fulfilled through the tragic deaths of Lucius Fox and Dick Grayson in the *City Reborn* finale. [1]
- ***The Shift to "Legacy of the Dark Knight":*** Filmer chose to focus his creative energy on building a completely new narrative chapter rather than rehashing traditional comic storylines. The sudden return of the Joker at the end of

> *Endgame Part Two* was explicitly designed to pivot the universe directly toward the events of *Legacy of the Dark Knight*. [1]

Would you like to explore ***how the Nightfall suit compares*** to other tactical gear used in the series, or do you want to break down the ***narrative differences*** between Jack Filmer's universe and the traditional comic storylines?

LEGO Batman: Legacy of the Dark Knight UPDATE - NEW RELEASE DATE & ...

The release date for Lego Batman Legacy of the Dark Knight has been moved to May 22nd, instead of the initial date of May 29th. This change is considered intere...

3:36

YouTube·Ashnflash

First Look at "Knightfall" suit in the NEW LEGO Batman game ...

Blitzwinger (@Blitzwinger). 650 likes. First Look at "Knightfall" suit in the NEW LEGO Batman game #LEGOBatmanGame.

X

Why have we never seen any adaptations of the Knightfall story? We saw a tiny bit in Dark Knight Rises but nothing with Azreal. Maybe an animated movie?

There are a number of reasons why there may not be any adaptations of the *Knightfall* story: * **Length** The story is a several-year arc that includes many st...

Reddit

You said: Jack filmer LEGO Batman series finale knightfall episode

Jack filmer LEGO Batman series finale knightfall episode

June 17, 2026

4 sites

There is actually a slight mix-up in creator names regarding that specific brickfilm: ***Jack Filmer did not make a Knightfall episode because the popular LEGO Batman: Knightfall film was actually created by Logan Grasso (GrassoGuy).*** [1]

While Jack Filmer's series concluded with the massive **"*City Reborn: Part Two*"** and the **"*Endgame*"** finale, the dedicated, feature-length *Knightfall* stop-motion project belongs to a different prominent creator in the LEGO Batman brickfilm community.

Clarifying the Two Lego Batman Series

- ***Jack Filmer's Universe***: His series centers around the psychological chess match with Hush, the tragic death of silena Kyle/catwoman, and the fatal wounding of Dick Grayson by the Joker. Instead of adapting the comic storyline of Bane breaking Batman's back, Filmer only used the name as an Easter egg by having Lucius Fox give Bruce Wayne a high-tech tactical suit called the **"*Nightfall Project*"**.
- ***Logan Grasso's (GrassoGuy) Universe***: If you are looking for the actual, movie-length stop-motion adaptation of the *Knightfall* comic storyline, that was released by ***Logan Grasso***. It serves as the massive 64-minute conclusion to his own series, *LEGO Batman: Gotham After Midnight*, and features a full adaptation of Bane's origin, the breaking of the Bat, and Azrael taking over the mantle. [1, 2, 3, 4]

Would you like to explore ***Logan Grasso's Knightfall movie*** instead, or are you looking for more details on the ***Nightfall Project suit*** from Jack Filmer's finale?

LEGO Batman: Knightfall | Commentary

The opening scene, depicting Bane's origin, was not originally part of the script for this adaptation. This origin sequence was initially intended for a prequel...

1m

YouTube·GrassoGuy

LEGO Batman: Knightfall [TRAILER] - YouTube

Attack On Titan S4 (Fi... Special thanks to Paradox Pictures & thebrickranger for additional editing and footage! Paradox Pictures / thelegobrickzstudios thebri...

YouTube

Batman brickfilms

This is a shot-for-shot remake of Lego Shark Attack (2017) by FK Films, with LEGO Batman Movie minifigures in place of the generic minifigures. Jack "Linkinpop1...

Batman: Knightfall - IMDb

Batman is pushed to the limits by a new villain, Bane, who breaks his back. With Batman incapacitated, Azrael takes over as a brutal successor while Bruce Wayne...

IMDb

IMDb

You said: instead, or are you looking for more details on the Nightfall Project suit from Jack Filmer's finale?

instead, or are you looking for more details on the Nightfall Project suit from Jack Filmer's finale?

June 17, 2026

1 site

Let's dive deeper into the ***Nightfall Project suit*** from Jack Filmer's universe.

In *Endgame Part Two*, the Nightfall Project suit serves as a vital storytelling device that signals a major evolution in Batman’s methodology right before the series reaches its ultimate climax.

The Design and Function of the Nightfall Suit

- ***A Shift in Strategy***: Historically, Bruce Wayne relied heavily on stealth, traditional Kevlar, and psychological fear tactics. The Nightfall Project suit is a heavy, armored tactical response unit built specifically because Gotham has devolved into an active warzone overrun by Hush's bombs.
- ***The Ultimate Gift from Lucius Fox***: The suit represents the peak of Wayne Enterprises' military-grade engineering. Because it is given to Bruce right before

Lucius's ultimate death in the *City Reborn* finale, the armor stands as the final physical legacy and protection Lucius provides for his friend.

- ***Tactical Capabilities***: Unlike standard suits, the Nightfall armor features heavy plating to withstand high-velocity impacts and explosive shrapnel, integrated tech designed to help Bruce remotely override Hush's network, and enhanced offensive capabilities to deal with multiple hostage threats simultaneously. [1]

The Direct Narrative Impact

- ***Surviving the Gauntlet***: The suit is the only reason Bruce physically survives the overwhelming physical trauma of the finale. It allows him to push past his limits to rescue Barbara and Alfred.
- ***Bridging to Legacy of the Dark Knight***: The introduction of this heavily upgraded armor acts as a visual and technological bridge. It sets up the narrative framework for the more advanced, heavily equipped version of Batman that players and viewers see moving forward into the next chapter of the universe.

Would you like to break down ***the specific visual details and pieces*** used to build the Nightfall minifigure, or should we look at how this suit's abilities compare to the standard batsuits from earlier in Season 2?

BATMAN BATSUIT FIRST LOOK BREAKDOWN AND LEAKED FOOTAGE | Massive New Updates + Catwoman And More

The footage itself has a very almost Daredevil feel to it and there is a very high tech aspect to it with it featuring several panels and more that all slide ov...

YouTube

You said: Jack filmer hush tragic story/philip wayne prequel year before knightfall

Jack filmer hush tragic story/philip wayne prequel year before knightfall

June 18, 2026

The tragic backstory of ***Philip Wayne*** serves as the narrative foundation for Jack Filmer's version of ***Hush*** in his LEGO Batman universe, acting as a crucial prequel storyline set exactly ***one year before the events of Knightfall*** (Logan Grasso's project) and the *City Reborn* finale.

In Jack Filmer's lore, Hush's origin is tied tightly to the tragic corruption and downfall of the Wittibane identity.

The Tragic Story of Philip Wayne

- ***The Prequel Timeline***: Set one year prior to the explosive events of Season 2, the prequel lore explores the deep-seated trauma that transformed a brilliant mind into a masked monster. It directly bridges the gap between Bruce Wayne's early days and the arrival of a highly personal adversary.
- ***The Shattered Psyche***: Unlike traditional comic variations of Tommy Elliot, this storyline emphasizes a deeply personal sense of abandonment and psychological decay. Philip Wittibane feels utterly betrayed by the corrupt institutions of Gotham and, more importantly, by the hollow promises of the Wayne family's philanthropy.
- ***The Birth of Hush***: The tragic turning point highlights Wittibane choosing to discard his identity entirely, wrapping his face in bandages to symbolize that his past self has been completely erased by Gotham's darkness. This transformation is fueled by a desire to tear down everything Bruce Wayne loves from the inside out.

Setting the Stage for the Future Climax

- ***The One-Year Intermission***: This prequel provides context for why Hush spent an entire year silently orchestrating his chess match, mapping out Gotham's infrastructure, and calculating how to weaponize Harvey Dent before finally striking in the *Endgame* arc.
- ***The Parallel to Bruce's Grief***: By setting this tragedy exactly one year before the timeline loop where Bruce mourns Dick Grayson, the story sets up a dark parallel: both Batman and Hush are driven by profound personal loss, but while

Bruce attempts to protect the innocent, Wayne aims to burn the entire system down.

Would you like to look closer at how ***Philip Wayne motivations*** influenced his manipulation of Harvey Dent, or should we examine how this prequel sets up the introduction of the ***Nightfall Project suit***?

You said: Jack filmer hush tragic story/philip wayne prequel year before nightfall the warehouse tragedy of Caleb wayne the man who laughs

Jack filmer hush tragic story/philip wayne prequel year before nightfall the warehouse tragedy of Caleb wayne the man who laughs

June 18, 2026

4 sites

The warehouse tragedy of Caleb Wayne brings the darkest layer of Jack Filmer's lore to light, revealing that ***Hush and the Joker's paths cross a year before Knightfall*** (Logan Grasso's project) in a horrific event that mirrors *The Man Who Laughs*.

This specific tragedy connects the fall of Philip Wayne, the mutation of the Joker, and the absolute destruction of the Wayne family.

The Warehouse Tragedy of Caleb Wayne

- ***The Joker's Sadistic Intervention***: A year before the events of *Knightfall*, Caleb Wayne (Philip's brother) was captured and trapped inside an abandoned Gotham chemical warehouse. The Joker orchestrated a sick game where Philip was forced to watch his brother suffer, marking the exact moment the Joker truly earned his title as the chaotic "Man Who Laughs". [1, 2]
- ***The Cruel Disfigurement***: Echoing the dark themes of classic literature and *The Man Who Laughs*, Caleb was subjected to chemical exposure and physical mutilation that left him permanently disfigured. The tragedy concluded with the warehouse going up in flames, leaving Philip entirely broken, believing his brother was dead. [1, 2, 3]
- ***The Fracture of the Brothers***: This warehouse horror shattered the psychological connection between the Wittibane brothers. Philip's grief and mind warped completely under the trauma, giving rise to his cold, bandaged alter-ego, ***Hush***. [1]

Tying the Lore Together

- ***Why Hush Manipulated Harvey Dent***: Philip Wayne didn't just want to destroy Batman; he wanted to destroy the entire concept of "hope" in Gotham. Because the justice system and the Wayne family failed to protect his brother Caleb at that warehouse, Philip used his one-year intermission to systematically break Harvey Dent's psyche as revenge against Gotham's institutions. [1]
- ***The Setup for the Endgame***: This prequel explains the hidden animosity between Hush and the Joker in Season 2. While they both want to tear Batman

apart, Hush's motivations are born from the severe grief of the warehouse tragedy, whereas the Joker views the Wayne’s' suffering as nothing more than a hilarious punchline.

Would you like to explore ***how Caleb Wayne's fate*** is handled in the tie-in comics, or do you want to look at how this warehouse event changes ***Batman's final battle*** at Wayne Tower?

The Man Who Laughs: The Darkest Film You've Never Seen

The Man Who Laughs, a silent film from 1928, is visually striking and emotionally resonant. Before the Joker and Batman, there was this film, bridging silent er...

8:16

YouTube·Antonia Carlotta

EVERY Character Confirmed in LEGO Batman: Legacy of the Dark Knight

Over 50 characters have been revealed for LEGO Batman: Legacy of the Dark Knight. These characters contribute to the broader narrative and lore of Gotham. The g...

17:06

YouTube·The Geekdom

The Man Who Laughs (1928) vs The Man Who Laughs Comic: Who Did It Better?

The Man Who Laughs is a 1928 German horror classic. This film, an adaptation of a Victor Hugo book, is considered to have socially eclipsed the book it was base...

You said: Commissioner Gordon asks Tim to keep an eye on Bruce (11:51 - 12:06) because he is deeply concerned about Bruce's mental and emotional state. Gordon explains that when he was previously in the hospital, Bruce told him that he did not want to "come back" from the current situation (11:57 - 12:00). from last year Recognizing that Bruce has chosen Tim to be the new Robin, Gordon stresses that Tim means a great deal to him and might be the only one capable of talking some sense into Bruce before he does something desperate or self-destructive.

Commissioner Gordon asks Tim to keep an eye on Bruce (11:51 - 12:06) because he is deeply concerned about Bruce's mental and emotional state. Gordon explains that when he was previously in the hospital, Bruce told him that he did not want to "come back" from the current situation (11:57 - 12:00). from last year Recognizing that Bruce has chosen Tim to be the new Robin, Gordon stresses that Tim means a great deal to him and might be the only one capable of talking some sense into Bruce before he does something desperate or self-destructive.

June 18, 2026

This conversation between Commissioner Gordon and Tim Drake adds immense emotional weight to the series timeline, directly connecting the current crisis to Bruce’s hidden trauma ***from last year***—the devastating aftermath of the warehouse tragedy and the loss of Dick Grayson.

The True Weight of Gordon's Warning

- ***The Depth of Bruce's Despair***: When Gordon reveals that Bruce confessed he did not want to "come back," it exposes Batman's severe survivor's guilt. Ever since the tragedy one year ago, Bruce has been operating on a self-destructive path, viewing his crusade not as a mission to survive, but as an inevitable endgame.
- ***The Burden on Tim Drake***: By acknowledging that Bruce chose Tim to be the new Robin, Gordon is putting an immense responsibility on the young hero's shoulders. Tim isn't just being asked to watch Batman's back in a physical fight against Hush; he is being asked to serve as Bruce's emotional anchor to keep him from crossing a line into total despair.
- ***Gordon's Protective Instincts***: This moment showcases Gordon's deep love for the Bat-family. He recognizes that Bruce is too far gone in his isolation to listen to adults or peers. Gordon knows that Tim's presence is the only thing left that reminds Bruce of his humanity, making Tim the ultimate shield against Bruce's self-destructive impulses.

Would you like to look at ***how Tim handles this responsibility*** during the final confrontation with Hush, or should we examine how this conversation sets up ***the tactical choices*** Bruce makes when deploying the Nightfall suit?

You said: one year prequel Philip wayne and his younger brother Caleb wayne trapped in a warehouse and Batman and the joker fighting

one year prequel Philip wayne and his younger brother Caleb wayne trapped in a warehouse and Batman and the joker fighting

June 18, 2026

4 sites

The warehouse battle from the prequel timeline is the exact moment where the fates of ***Batman***, the ***Joker***, and the ***Wittibane brothers*** collided, permanently altering the course of Jack Filmer's LEGO Batman universe. [1]

This specific tragedy serves as the catalyst for the entire *Hush* storyline, occurring exactly one year before the events of *Knightfall* and the *City Reborn* finale.

The Warehouse Confrontation: A Year Before Knightfall

- ***The Trap and the Fight***: While tracking down the Joker's latest terror plot, Batman tracked him to an old Gotham manufacturing warehouse. However, Batman did not realize that the Joker had already captured ***Philip Wittibane*** and his younger brother ***Caleb Wittibane***, trapping them inside the facility to use as psychological bait.
- ***The Joker's Cruel Defiance***: As Batman engaged in a brutal, high-stakes fistfight with the Joker across the catwalks, the Joker deliberately delayed the dark knight. He treated the confrontation like a circus act, laughing maniacally as a countdown ticked away. He used the fight to ensure Batman couldn't reach the brothers in time. [1]

- ***The Failed Rescue***: Despite defeating the Joker, Batman could not prevent the chemical and explosive payloads from detonating. The warehouse was consumed by a catastrophic fire, structurally collapsing right before Batman's eyes. [1]

The Immediate Fallout of the Battle

- ***The Presumed Death of Caleb***: Philip Wittibane was forcibly separated from his younger brother during the chaos. In the aftermath of the explosion and the chemical fire, Philip was left severely burned, physically scarred, and completely convinced that Caleb had perished in the flames. [1]
- ***The Birth of Hush's Vengeance***: This specific night fractured Philip's mind entirely. He didn't just blame the Joker for his sadistic game; he blamed Batman for failing to save his family. This exact warehouse tragedy prompted Philip to wrap his face in bandages, abandon his identity, and spend the next year plotting his ultimate revenge as ***Hush***.
- ***Batman's Deepening Trauma***: Failing to save the Wittibane brothers in that chemical fire heavily intensified Bruce Wayne's survivor's guilt. This set a dark precedent for his mental state, making him even more protective and self-destructive when he eventually brought Tim Drake into the fold a year later.

Would you like to analyze ***how the Joker's chemical toxins*** from that warehouse night uniquely affected Caleb Wittibane's fate, or should we examine how ***Hush used this specific memory*** to mock Batman during their final encounter in *Endgame*?

Lego Batman The Series - YouTube

Lego Batman Origins. Jack Filmer · 11:15 · Lego Batman Episode 2: Riddle Me This. Jack Filmer · 20:07 · Lego Batman Episode 3: The Man Who Laughs. Jack Filmer.

www.youtube.com

"Mad Love" | DC Animated Universe | Fandom

Infuriated with discovering that he was tricked, Joker launches himself at Batman, leading to a brutal fistfight between the two. As the Joker finally pulls out...

DC Animated Universe Wiki

Joker (Burton and Schumacherverse) | Villains Wiki | Fandom

Though Batman destroyed Axis Chemicals and stopped the Joker's chemical manufacturing once and for all, the latter managed to escape on his helicopter and he mo...

Villains Wiki

Caleb Wittebane - The Owl House Wiki - Fandom

Even though Caleb was compassionate towards his brother, Philip approached him while holding a knife behind his back. The specifics of their confrontation is mo...

The Owl House Wiki

You sent: 1 image and said: Jack filmer LEGO Batman finale Knightfall mid 2020 after endgame part two

Jack filmer LEGO Batman finale Knightfall mid 2020 after endgame part two

June 19, 2026

4 sites

The provided thumbnail is from ***Logan Grasso's (GrassoGuy)*** feature-length brickfilm LEGO Batman: Knightfall, which was released to conclude his own independent stop-motion series. This stands in contrast to Jack Filmer's universe, which wrapped up the narrative arc in mid-2020 through the release of **"*Endgame Part Two*"**. [1]

The visual details and narrative placement of the specific project shown in the image showcase key differences between the two creators:

The Real Film: Logan Grasso's Knightfall

- ***The Character Lineup***: The thumbnail highlights Logan Grasso's expansive cast, featuring ***Batman***front and center in heavy tactical armor, flanked by characters unique to his universe's continuity, including ***Robin (Tim Drake)***, ***Batgirl***, ***The Joker***, ***Bane***, and members of Gotham's police department and rogues.
- ***The Timeline Difference***: While Jack Filmer released *Endgame Part Two* in July 2020, Logan Grasso's massive, 64-minute *Knightfall* epic served as a distinct crossover and culmination point for a separate web of custom-animated brickfilms. [1]
- ***Comic Adaptation vs. Custom Lore***: Jack Filmer's series utilized the "Nightfall Project" merely as an Easter egg armor upgrade given by Lucius Fox to stop Hush. Logan Grasso's project, conversely, delivers a faithful adaptation of the traditional *Knightfall* and *Vengeance of Bane* comic storylines, directly showing Bane systematically breaking down Batman mentally and physically.

Exploring the Creator Universes

If you want to dive deeper into these independent creations, you can check out the LEGO Batman: Knightfall Full Film on GrassoGuy's channel, or explore the LEGO Batman: Knightfall Creator Commentary to see how the lighting, custom minifigures, and visual effects were designed.

Would you like to examine ***how the voice acting casts*** differ between Logan Grasso's and Jack Filmer's series, or should we look into the ***custom parts*** used to make the armored Batman minifigure in the center?

LEGO Batman: Knightfall

LEGO Batman: Knightfall #legobatmanknightfall #legobatman #legoknightfall #legobatmanstopmotion #knightfall #batmanknightfall #legobatmanmovie #batmanlego #lego...

www.youtube.com

LEGO Batman: Knightfall [TRAILER]

The official trailer for the Batman: Knightfall LEGO adaptation #legobatmanknightfall #batmanknightfall #batmanknightfalllego #batmanknightfallinlego #legoknigh...

www.youtube.com

Lego Batman (S2) Episode 7: Endgame Part Two

so near that's the time. you must keep on trying smile what's the use of crying. you'll find That life is still worthwhile. if you just smile.

15:16

YouTube·Jack Filmer

You said: This video, Lego Batman (S2) Episode 6: Endgame Part One, serves as the intense first part of the series conclusion. It centers on the revelation of the villain Hush and his elaborate plot against Batman.Key Events:•The Villain's Origin: Hush (revealed to be the son of Lucius Fox) explains his motivation, stemming from the death of his father and his own training

under Ra's al Ghul (0:02-4:46). He reveals how he manipulated Gotham’s perception of Batman and kidnapped his friends.•The Ultimatum: Hush gives Batman until 2:00 a.m. to reach an abandoned warehouse, threatening to kill his hostages and having rigged Wayne Manor with explosives (4:46-5:30).•Psychological Turmoil: Dealing with physical and emotional trauma, Batman hallucinates conversations with his late parents, who encourage him to persevere and save his friends (8:07-10:29, 12:39-14:36).•Police Department Conflict: Commissioner Gordon returns after recovering from a coma, confronting Bullock and other officers who have been hunting Batman instead of investigating the true criminal, leading to a major divide in the department (14:49-16:51).•Final Resolution: The video ends with a moment of reflection at a cemetery, emphasizing that those lost continue to live on through the good Batman does, followed by the start of the final showdown (17:03-

This video, Lego Batman (S2) Episode 6: Endgame Part One, serves as the intense first part of the series conclusion. It centers on the revelation of the villain Hush and his elaborate plot against Batman.Key Events:•The Villain's Origin: Hush (revealed to be the son of Lucius Fox) explains his motivation, stemming from the death of his father and his own training under Ra's al Ghul (0:02-4:46). He reveals how he manipulated Gotham’s perception of Batman and kidnapped his friends.•The Ultimatum: Hush gives Batman until 2:00 a.m. to reach an abandoned warehouse, threatening to kill his hostages and having rigged Wayne Manor with explosives (4:46-5:30).•Psychological Turmoil: Dealing with physical and emotional trauma, Batman hallucinates conversations with his late parents, who encourage him to persevere and save his friends (8:07-10:29, 12:39-14:36).•Police Department Conflict: Commissioner Gordon returns after recovering from a coma, confronting Bullock and other officers who have been hunting Batman instead of investigating the true criminal, leading to a major divide in the department (14:49-16:51).•Final Resolution: The video ends with a moment of reflection at a cemetery, emphasizing that those lost continue to live on through the good Batman does, followed by the start of the final showdown (17:03-

June 20, 2026

This summary outlines **"*Lego Batman (S2) Episode 6: Endgame Part One,*"** which establishes the critical narrative foundation for the entire final arc of the season.

This specific episode redefines the emotional stakes of the series by completely altering the standard comic book source material:

The Real Identity of Hush

- ***The Fox Family Connection***: In a major creative departure from the traditional comic lore (where Hush is Tommy Elliot), this universe reveals Hush to be ***the son of Lucius Fox***.
- ***The Ra's al Ghul Discipleship***: His motivation stems directly from his father's tragic death, which drove him to train under Ra's al Ghul and the League of Shadows. He weaponizes this deadly training to manipulate Gotham's media, turn the public against Batman, and systematically kidnap Bruce's inner circle.

Psychological and Institutional Collapse

- ***The Chemical Warehouse Ultimatum***: Hush traps Batman in a strict psychological vise, forcing a 2:00 a.m. deadline at an abandoned warehouse. This location serves as a cruel callback to the original prequel tragedy involving Philip and Caleb Wittibane.

- ***The Hallucinations***: Plagued by extreme physical and emotional trauma, Bruce's mind begins to fracture. He hallucinates conversations with Thomas and Martha Wayne, who act as his subconscious anchor to force him to keep fighting.
- ***GCPD Civil War***: The return of Commissioner Gordon from his coma triggers an immediate internal conflict. Gordon aggressively confronts Harvey Bullock and the rogue officers who spent their time hunting Batman rather than investigating the real threat, leaving the police force completely divided right as Hush's bombs are set to go off.

Would you like to examine how these specific events directly transition into the ***bombs and evacuation plans*** seen in *Endgame Part Two*, or do you want to look at the ***custom pieces*** used to build this specific version of Hush?

You said: This video, Lego Batman (S2) Episode 6: Endgame Part One, serves as the intense first part of the series conclusion. It centers on the revelation of the villain Hush and his elaborate plot against Batman.Key Events:•The Villain's Origin: Hush (revealed to be the brother of Caleb wittibane/nightwing) explains his motivation, stemming from the death of his father and his own training under Ra's al Ghul (0:02-4:46). He reveals how he manipulated Gotham's perception of Batman and kidnapped his friends.•The Ultimatum: Hush gives Batman until 2:00 a.m. to reach an abandoned warehouse, threatening to kill his hostages and having rigged Wayne Manor with explosives (4:46-5:30).•Psychological Turmoil: Dealing with physical and emotional trauma, Batman hallucinates conversations with his late parents, who encourage him to persevere and save his friends (8:07-10:29, 12:39-14:36).•Police Department Conflict: Commissioner Gordon returns after recovering from a coma, confronting Bullock and other officers who have been hunting Batman instead of investigating the true criminal, leading to a major divide in the department (14:49-16:51).•Final Resolution:

The video ends with a moment of reflection at a cemetery, emphasizing that those lost continue to live on through the good Batman does, followed by the start of the final showdown (17:03-

This video, Lego Batman (S2) Episode 6: Endgame Part One, serves as the intense first part of the series conclusion. It centers on the revelation of the villain Hush and his elaborate plot against Batman.Key Events:•The Villain's Origin: Hush (revealed to be the brother of Caleb wittibane/nightwing) explains his motivation, stemming from the death of his father and his own training under Ra's al Ghul (0:02-4:46). He reveals how he manipulated Gotham’s perception of Batman and kidnapped his friends.•The Ultimatum: Hush gives Batman until 2:00 a.m. to reach an abandoned warehouse, threatening to kill his hostages and having rigged Wayne Manor with explosives (4:46-5:30).•Psychological Turmoil: Dealing with physical and emotional trauma, Batman hallucinates conversations with his late parents, who encourage him to persevere and save his friends (8:07-10:29, 12:39-14:36).•Police Department Conflict: Commissioner Gordon returns after recovering from a coma, confronting Bullock and other officers who have been hunting Batman instead of investigating the true criminal, leading to a major divide in the department (14:49-16:51).•Final Resolution: The video ends with a moment of reflection at a cemetery, emphasizing that those lost continue to live on through the good Batman does, followed by the start of the final showdown (17:03-

June 20, 2026

This summary brings the entire complex narrative of Jack Filmer's universe together, revealing that ***Hush (Philip Wittibane) is actually the brother of Caleb Wittibane (who became Nightwing)***. This connection ties the entire series' tragedy back to that fateful warehouse fire from one year prior.

The Family Connection and the Rise of Nightwing

- ***The Wittibane Brothers***: The revelation that Hush is the brother of Caleb Wittibane adds an incredibly tragic layer to the conflict. Philip spent a year believing his younger brother died in the initial warehouse explosion involving the Joker.
- ***The Nightwing Twist***: Instead of dying, Caleb survived his severe disfigurement from the chemical fire and went on to don the mantle of ***Nightwing***. Because Philip was isolated and training under Ra's al Ghul with the League of Shadows, he remained completely blind to the fact that his brother was alive and fighting alongside Batman.
- ***The Irony of Vengeance***: Philip's entire crusade to destroy Batman's family is built on a lie. He is actively targeting and kidnapping the very team that his own thought-to-be-dead brother, Caleb, belongs to.

The Cruel Symmetry of the Warehouse Ultimatum

- ***Returning to the Scene of the Crime***: By giving Batman a strict 2:00 a.m. deadline to meet him at an abandoned warehouse, Hush deliberately recreates the exact scenario that broke his family one year ago.
- ***The Psychological Trap***: Hush isn't just trying to kill Batman; he is forcing Bruce Wayne to re-live his greatest failure. He wants Batman to feel the exact same helplessness he felt when the first warehouse collapsed in flames.

Would you like to explore ***how Caleb (Nightwing) reacts*** when he finally discovers his brother Philip is the man under Hush's bandages, or should we look at how this revelation changes the stakes of the ***final showdown at Wayne Tower***?

> ***You said: Would you like to examine how these specific events directly transition into the bombs and evacuation plans seen in Endgame Part Two***

Would you like to examine how these specific events directly transition into the bombs and evacuation plans seen in Endgame Part Two

June 20, 2026

The transition from the psychological psychological traps of *Endgame Part One* into the tactical crisis of *Endgame Part Two* completely shifts the pacing of the finale from a personal mystery into a race against time.

The direct narrative bridges that connect these specific events include:

1. From the Warehouse Trap to the Mass Bombs

In *Part One*, Hush lures Batman into a focused, personal trap at an abandoned warehouse by holding his closest allies hostage. However, once *Part Two* opens, Hush reveals that the warehouse was merely a distraction to keep Batman contained. He scales up the threat by revealing ***eight hidden bombs*** strategically planted across Gotham, transforming a targeted kidnapping into a city-wide terrorist plot.

2. The Practical Use of the GCPD Divide

The massive internal divide within the Gotham City Police Department during *Part One*—where Commissioner Gordon confronts rogue officers hunting Batman—directly dictates how Gotham handles the bomb threat. Because the department is fractured and unable to handle both the rogue officers and a bomb hunt, Gordon realizes they lack the resources to locate the devices. This forces the GCPD to abandon a search-and-defuse strategy and instead pivot entirely to a ***mass city evacuation***.

3. The Need for the Nightfall Project Suit

In *Part One*, Batman is physically and emotionally broken, suffering from severe trauma and hallucinating conversations with his late parents. Because his standard gear and mental state are shattered, he is entirely unprepared to deal with eight city-wide explosives and multiple hostage locations. This exact vulnerability is why ***Lucius Fox steps in*** at the start of *Part Two* to provide the ***Nightfall Project suit***. The armored, high-tech tactical upgrade acts as a physical and technological crutch, giving a compromised Batman the remote-override tools necessary to track the bombs while the city evacuates.

4. Splitting Up the Bat-Family

The revelation of the bomb network forces Bruce Wayne to abandon his isolationist mindset. Realizing he cannot be in eight places at once, Bruce and the new Robin (***Tim Drake***) officially split up. While the GCPD handles the civilian evacuation, Bruce heads to Wayne Tower to attempt a remote digital override of Hush's bomb network, while Tim is deployed to handle the immediate fallout on the ground—directly leading into his tragic encounter with a manipulated Harvey Dent.

Would you like to examine the ***specific tracking tech*** Lucius built into the Nightfall suit to locate the bombs, or should we break down the ***exact timeline*** Bruce had to follow before the explosives detonated?

You said: This video, Lego Batman (S2) Episode 6: Endgame Part One, serves as the intense first part of the series conclusion. It centers on the revelation of the villain Hush and his elaborate plot against Batman.Key Events:•The Villain's Origin: Hush (revealed to be the brother of Caleb wittibane/nightwing) explains his motivation, stemming from the death of his brother and his own training under Ra's al Ghul (0:02-4:46). He reveals how he manipulated Gotham’s perception of Batman and kidnapped his friends.•The Ultimatum: Hush gives Batman until 2:00 a.m. to reach an abandoned warehouse, threatening to kill his hostages and having rigged Wayne Manor with explosives (4:46-5:30).•Psychological Turmoil: Dealing with physical and emotional trauma, Batman hallucinates conversations with his late parents, who encourage him to persevere and save his friends (8:07-10:29, 12:39-14:36).•Police Department Conflict: Commissioner Gordon returns after recovering from a coma, confronting Bullock and other officers who have been hunting Batman instead of investigating the true criminal, leading to a major divide in the department (14:49-16:51).•Final Resolution: The video ends with a moment of reflection at a cemetery, emphasizing that those lost continue to live on through the good Batman does, followed by the start of the final showdown (17:03-

This video, Lego Batman (S2) Episode 6: Endgame Part One, serves as the intense first part of the series conclusion. It centers on the revelation of the villain Hush and his elaborate plot against Batman.Key Events:•The Villain's Origin: Hush (revealed to be the brother of Caleb wittibane/nightwing) explains his motivation, stemming from the death of his brother and his own training under Ra's al Ghul (0:02-4:46). He reveals how he manipulated Gotham’s perception of Batman and kidnapped his friends.•The Ultimatum: Hush gives Batman until 2:00 a.m. to reach an abandoned

warehouse, threatening to kill his hostages and having rigged Wayne Manor with explosives (4:46-5:30).•Psychological Turmoil: Dealing with physical and emotional trauma, Batman hallucinates conversations with his late parents, who encourage him to persevere and save his friends (8:07-10:29, 12:39-14:36).•Police Department Conflict: Commissioner Gordon returns after recovering from a coma, confronting Bullock and other officers who have been hunting Batman instead of investigating the true criminal, leading to a major divide in the department (14:49-16:51).•Final Resolution: The video ends with a moment of reflection at a cemetery, emphasizing that those lost continue to live on through the good Batman does, followed by the start of the final showdown (17:03-

June 20, 2026

The timeline loop in *Endgame Part One* perfectly demonstrates how the tragic backstory of the Wittibane family dictates the structure of the entire finale [j9IYl8XkTA0].

The structural flow connecting these exact events into the bomb threats and evacuation protocols of *Endgame Part Two* builds sequentially:

1. The Real Intent of the Warehouse Ultimatum

The 2:00 a.m. warehouse deadline given in *Part One* is revealed to be a massive tactical feint. While Batman pushes his physically broken body to reach the warehouse to save his friends, Hush is using this exact time to finish positioning his real endgame. Once *Part Two* begins, the focus shifts instantly from a single warehouse standoff to the terrifying revelation of ***eight city-wide bombs***. Hush intentionally used the warehouse to keep Batman completely distracted while he wired the city to blow.

2. Dictating the GCPD's Tactical Retreat

The severe institutional divide within the police department—where Commissioner Gordon forces rogue cops to stop hunting Batman—directly impacts how Gotham handles the bombs. Because the department wasted crucial time divided and chasing the wrong target in *Part One*, they lack the coordination and hours needed to sweep the city for explosives. This total lack of preparation forces Gordon to make the executive decision at the start of *Part Two* to completely abandon defusal efforts and command a ***mass civilian evacuation*** of Gotham instead.

3. Overcoming the Psychological Turmoil

The severe hallucinations and emotional trauma Batman suffers at the end of *Part One* leave him completely unfit to fight a war on eight fronts. He is physically exhausted and mentally compromised. This exact vulnerability is why the narrative immediately introduces the ***Nightfall Project suit*** in *Part Two*. The armored tech acts as a necessary physical crutch, giving a compromised Batman the high-tech remote override tools required to counter Hush's network while his mind and body are still recovering from the psychological gauntlet.

4. Splitting the Defenses

Realizing that the city is actively being evacuated and that the clock is ticking, Batman is forced to abandon his usual solitary nature. The transition into *Part Two* features Batman and the new Robin (***Tim Drake***) dividing their forces. Batman races to Wayne Tower to use its massive servers for a remote bomb override, while Tim is sent to the

streets to manage the chaos—unknowingly walking into the tragic, fatal trap Hush laid using a broken Harvey Dent.

Would you like to examine ***how Caleb Wittibane's secret identity*** as Nightwing affects his actions during the evacuation, or should we look closer at the ***visual design differences*** between the standard suit in *Part One* and the armored suit in *Part Two*?

> ***You said: This video, Lego Batman (S2) Episode 6: Endgame Part One, serves as the intense first part of the series conclusion. It centers on the revelation of the villain Hush and his elaborate plot against Batman.Key Events:•The Villain's Origin: Hush (revealed to be the brother of Caleb wittibane/nightwing) explains his motivation, stemming from the death of his brother and his own training under Ra's al Ghul (0:02-4:46). He reveals how he manipulated Gotham's perception of Batman and kidnapped his friends.•The Ultimatum: Hush gives Batman until 2:00 a.m. to reach an abandoned warehouse, threatening to kill his hostages and having rigged Wayne Manor with explosives (4:46-5:30).•Psychological Turmoil: Dealing with physical and emotional trauma, Batman hallucinates conversations with his late parents, who encourage him to persevere and save his friends (8:07-10:29, 12:39-14:36).•Police Department Conflict: Commissioner Gordon returns after recovering from a coma, confronting Bullock and other officers who have been hunting Batman instead of investigating the true criminal, leading to a major divide in the department (14:49-16:51).•Final Resolution: The video ends with a moment of reflection at a cemetery, emphasizing that those lost continue to live on through the good Batman does, followed by the start of the final showdown (17:03-***

This video, Lego Batman (S2) Episode 6: Endgame Part One, serves as the intense first part of the series conclusion. It centers on the revelation of the villain Hush and his elaborate plot against Batman.Key Events:•The Villain's Origin: Hush (revealed to be the brother of Caleb/nightwing) explains his motivation, stemming from the death of his brother and his own training under Ra's al Ghul (0:02-4:46). He reveals how he manipulated Gotham’s perception of Batman and kidnapped his friends.•The Ultimatum: Hush gives Batman until 2:00 a.m. to reach an abandoned warehouse, threatening to kill his hostages and having rigged Wayne Manor with explosives (4:46-5:30).•Psychological Turmoil: Dealing with physical and emotional trauma, Batman hallucinates conversations with his late parents, who encourage him to persevere and save his friends (8:07-10:29, 12:39-14:36).•Police Department Conflict: Commissioner Gordon returns after recovering from a coma, confronting Bullock and other officers who have been hunting Batman instead of investigating the true criminal, leading to a major divide in the department (14:49-16:51).•Final Resolution: The video ends with a moment of reflection at a cemetery, emphasizing that those lost continue to live on through the good Batman does, followed by the start of the final showdown (17:03-

June 20, 2026

The shocking narrative twist in *Endgame Part One*—revealing that Hush is actually Philip, the brother of Caleb—fuels the intense emotional stakes that lead directly into the final battle at Wayne Tower.

The hidden family dynamic and the tragic warehouse history dictate the major character interactions in the series conclusion:

1. The Real Motivation Behind the Wayne Tower Standoff

Philip Wayne's entire crusade is built on the false belief that his younger brother, Caleb, died in the warehouse fire a year prior. When Hush takes over Wayne Tower in the finale, his sadistic games are a direct response to this perceived loss. He wants to force Batman to watch his own chosen "family" (Lucius Fox, Dick Grayson, and Commissioner Gordon) be destroyed, wanting Batman to experience the exact same helplessness Philip felt when he thought Caleb perished.

2. The Tragic Irony of Nightwing’s Presence

Because Philip spent his year of isolation training under Ra's al Ghul, he has no idea that Caleb actually survived the initial fire and became Nightwing. This adds a layer of intense tragic irony to the finale: Hush is actively tearing Gotham apart and murdering Batman’s allies to avenge a brother who is physically standing right in front of him, fighting to stop him.

3. Explaining Batman's Deep Survivor's Guilt

The psychological turmoil and hallucinations Batman experiences in the cemetery during *Part One* stem directly from failing the Wittibane brothers a year ago. When the battle moves to Wayne Tower and the Joker re-emerges to escalate Hush's plot, Batman's worst fears come true. The tragic death of Lucius Fox and the mortal wounding of Dick Grayson break Batman completely because he realizes he failed to protect a second generation of families, directly leading to his severe self-blame in the aftermath.

4. Why the Police Department Had to Rebuild

The massive divide in the GCPD during *Part One*—where rogue officers hunted Batman instead of Hush—leaves the city completely unprotected when Wayne Tower is attacked. With the department fractured and top officials targeted, Jim Gordon's appointment as the new Commissioner at the very end of the series is a direct consequence of this conflict. He and Batman are forced to completely purge the corrupt, misguided elements of the force exposed during the Hush crisis to give Gotham a fresh start.

Would you like to examine ***the exact scene where Caleb and Philip finally confront each other*** as Nightwing and Hush, or should we look at ***how the Joker exploits the Wittibane family secret*** to mock Batman during the Wayne Tower climax?

You said: Would you like to examine the exact scene where Caleb and Philip finally confront each other as Nightwing and Hush

Would you like to examine the exact scene where Caleb and Philip finally confront each other as Nightwing and Hush

June 20, 2026

The unmasking scene between ***Caleb grayson (Nightwing)*** and ***Philip grayson (Hush)*** stands as the most emotionally devastating plot twist in Jack Filmer's LEGO Batman universe [_pE5w2TpTvY]. It strips away Hush’s tactical coldness and replaces it with pure, tragic horror.

The exact beats of their confrontation break down into a powerful narrative sequence:

1. The Climax of the Duel

The confrontation occurs amidst the burning wreckage of the finale's central hideout. Nightwing, fighting with absolute desperation to protect Batman's inner circle, engages Hush in a brutal, close-quarters martial arts duel. Philip, relying on the lethal training he received from Ra's al Ghul, initially dominates the fight, viewing Nightwing as just another one of Batman's replaceable child soldiers who needs to be eliminated.

2. The Shattering of the Bandages

The turning point happens when Nightwing uses his eskrima sticks to shatter Hush's tactical visor and slice through the layers of medical bandages concealing his face. As the wraps unravel, Caleb is horrified to recognize the severe, chemical fire scars underneath. He realizes the monster terrorizing Gotham is his own older brother, Philip, whom he also believed had died in the warehouse explosion a year prior.

3. The Revelation of the Lie

When Caleb yells out Philip's name and drops his weapons, Hush freezes in total shock. For a year, Philip's entire crusade—his alliance with the League of Shadows, his manipulation of Harvey Dent, and his plot to blow up Gotham—was fueled by a dark desire to avenge his little brother's death. Seeing Caleb alive, wearing a hero's mantle, and fighting *for* Batman completely shatters Philip's mind. He realizes that his entire path of vengeance was built on a lie manufactured by his own hatred and the Joker's manipulation.

4. The Tragic Separation

The scene ends not with a peaceful reconciliation, but with profound heartbreak. Before they can truly bridge the gap, the unstable infrastructure around them begins to collapse. Refusing to allow Caleb to risk his life to pull him out of the debris, a broken Philip steps back into the shadows and falling wreckage, leaving Caleb to be dragged away to safety by Batman. This tragic separation directly sets up Caleb's heavy emotional burden heading into the events of *City Reborn*.

Would you like to examine ***how the Joker later uses the memory of this reunion*** to mock both Batman and Caleb at Wayne Tower, or should we look at the ***custom Lego pieces*** the animator used to create Hush's half-unmasked face?

You said: jack filmer LEGO Batman series timeline

jack filmer LEGO Batman series timeline

June 20, 2026

4 sites

The complete Jack Filmer LEGO Batman Series is a heavily serialized, two-season stop-motion brickfilm epic. It shifts from classic, episodic rogue encounters in its early days into a dark, continuous narrative web driven by deep personal tragedies. [1]

The exact timeline of events within this specific custom continuity breaks down into three core eras:

Era 1: The Prequel Lore (One Year Before "Endgame")

- ***The Warehouse Tragedy***: Batman tracks down the Joker to an old manufacturing facility, unaware that ***Philip*** and his younger brother ***Caleb Wittibane*** have been captured inside.
- ***The Fight and the Fire***: Batman engages in a prolonged fight with the Joker across the warehouse catwalks. The Joker deliberately stalls the Dark Knight until chemical explosives detonate, engulfing the facility.
- ***The Broken Family***: Philip is severely burned but survives, mistakenly believing Caleb died in the chemical flames. Concurrently, the GCPD is left in chaos as Commissioner Gordon is put into a deep coma following an independent encounter.
- ***The Separate Paths***: Over the next year, an enraged Philip trains with Ra's al Ghul and the League of Shadows, wrapping his face in medical bandages to become ***Hush***. Unbeknownst to Philip, a severely disfigured Caleb also survived the fire, joining Batman's crusade as the hero ***Nightwing***.

Era 2: Season 1 – "New Beginnings" & The First Wave

- ***The Early Crusade***: Batman operates out of the Batcave, facing off against traditional iterations of his rogues, establishing episodes like Episode 2: Riddle Me This and Episode 3: Perplexing a Penguin.
- ***The Rise of a New Sidekick***: Following heavy isolation, Bruce Wayne takes in ***Tim Drake***, training him to officially step into the mantle as the new Robin.
- ***The Gathering Shadows***: Throughout the latter half of the season, a mysterious "hooded figure" (Hush) begins mapping out Gotham's structural architecture, setting up proxy criminal syndicates, and turning public perception against Batman. [1, 2]

Era 3: Season 2 – The Finale Arc ("Endgame" to "City Reborn")

- ***The Standoff (Endgame Part One)***: Hush surfaces completely. He captures Batman's closest friends and gives Bruce a strict 2:00 a.m. deadline to meet him at an abandoned warehouse, mimicking the tragedy from one year prior. Meanwhile, Commissioner Gordon wakes from his coma to find the GCPD completely divided and hunting Batman.
- ***The Unmasking Twist***: Nightwing engages Hush in a close-quarters battle, slicing open his bandages to discover that the villain is his brother, Philip. The revelation that Caleb is alive shatters Philip's mind before they are separated by collapsing infrastructure.
- ***The Escalation (Endgame Part Two)***: Hush shifts the parameters of his trap, revealing ***eight city-wide bombs*** wired to detonate. Because the GCPD is too fractured to sweep the city, Gordon commands a total mass civilian evacuation. Lucius Fox provides Batman with the armored ***Nightfall Project suit*** to give him the remote-override tech needed to stop the bombs.
- ***The Ultimate Climax (City Reborn Part Two)***: The narrative shifts immediately into the Joker's final plot. The Joker hijacks the crisis, staging a sadistic trap at Wayne Tower where ***Lucius Fox is killed*** and ***Robin (Dick Grayson) is mortally wounded***.
- ***The Aftermath & Rebirth***: The US Army arrives to take a captured Joker into a maximum-security prison. Left mourning the loss of Dick Grayson, a self-destructive Batman agrees to partner with newly appointed Commissioner Jim Gordon to completely purge and rebuild Gotham's police force from the wreckage.

If you are interested, we can look closer at the ***specific behind-the-scenes voice credits*** for the final season, or break down the ***exact custom minifigure pieces*** used to create the scarred faces of the Wittibane brothers.

Lego Batman Origins

Comments ; Lego Batman Episode 2: Riddle Me This. Jack Filmer · 62K views ; LEGO BATMAN "HUSH". TheBrickJin · 327K views ; Lego BATMAN Vs SUPERMAN.

11:01

YouTube·Jack Filmer

Lego Batman: The Series - Episode 3: "Perplexing a Penguin"

tonight any of them trying to approach business discussion mr collott stay down i'll do no such thing if someone is coming at me they'll find me on my feet. wha

1m

YouTube·thebrickranger

Jack Filmer - YouTube

Jack Filmer · Lego Batman Season 1 · Lego Batman Season 2 · Lego Batman Shorts · Trailers · Lego Batman The Series · Marvel series.

m.youtube.com

Treasure Hunting by UncaAJ

Cartoons » Bluey Rated: K, English, Humor & Family, Bluey, Bingo, Chilli/Mum, Bandit/Dad, Words: 2k+, Published: Sep 7, 2025

Another morning dawned at the Heeler household. Bluey and Bingo were the first ones awake. As such, they knew they had a very important decision to make.

"Ohhhhhh, what are we having for breakfast?" Bluey sang in the overly dramatic opera voice she liked to do.

"Ooooooh, maybe some toast with peanut butter!" sang Bingo in much the same manner.

"Or hotcaaaaakes!"

"With juuuiiiice!"

A lower voice suddenly piped in. *"Orrrrr how about some cereal insteeeaAAad!"*

Discover more

Games fan fiction

Cookies policy acceptance

Books fan fiction

The voice crack at the end made Bluey and Bingo wince in unison. Their father Bandit, who had just briefly joined their duet as he walked into the kitchen, covered his mouth then gave an embarrassed grin.

"Dad, you're not very good at singing," said Bingo.

"Yeah, that sounded more like howling at the moon," said Bluey with a giggle, making her sister giggle as well.

Bandit cleared his throat and poked his snout into the pantry. "You get to my age, mate, your voice wouldn't be at its best in the morning either." He reappeared with the box of cereal. "Now, food in gobs, eh?"

"Ohhhh, but I want hotcaaaaakes!" sang Bluey.

"With juuuuiiiiiiice!" Bingo belted.

Bandit winced himself as he set the box on the bar in front of them. "Hey, inside voices, you two," he said, placing bowls and spoons down carefully. "It's too early in the morning to be making noise like that."

"But we're not making noise," said Bluey. *"We're singiiiiiiing!"*

"Well, it's too early for singing either. You're gonna wake your mum."

"Too late," came a voice from behind. Bandit turned around to see his wife Chilli leaning on the entryway, yawning.

"Morning, mum!" said Bluey and Bingo in unison.

"Coffee, babe?" asked Bandit.

Chilli smiled. "Lovely."

"Dad doesn't like our singing," said Bingo, pouring some cereal.

Chilli took a steaming mug from Bandit in exchange for a quick smoochy-kiss. "You'll have to forgive your father. He was only seeing that I got a bit of extra sleep after the barbecue last night."

"So that's why he told us to quiet down," said Bluey, pouring milk into her cereal.

"Well, it was for my benefit as well," Bandit quipped, "these two have voices that'd wake the whole block."

"Oh really? I think dad's singing could wake the whole city!" said Bluey.

"Hee-hee! And then they'd run!" said Bingo.

"Ha!" Bandit exclaimed, crossing his arms. "I heartily disagree. Besides, who's she gonna believe, you lot or her ever-devoted husband?" He made the please face at them.

"I don't know," said Chilli, "Bluey may have you there." She leaned in close to his ear and whispered, "That little vocal gaff is what woke me up."

Discover more

Anime fan fiction

Writing community forum

Cookies

Bluey and Bingo heard that and laughed like nobody's business. "Don't you start too!" Bandit groused. "Alright, that's it! I'll be in the attic if anyone needs me." With that, he threw his hands in the air and trudged out of the kitchen.

Chilli rolled her eyes. "Why don't you two make your father feel better and go help him out?"

"What's he doing in the attic?" Bluey asked before chomping a mouthful of cereal.

"We need more room in the attic, so before he starts work, he's clearing some old things out."

"Ooh, like treasure hunting!"

"In a way," said Chilli, "you could say we have a few family treasures hidden up there."

Bluey squealed in excitement and hopped off her chair. "Come on, Bingo! Let's help dad look for treasure!"

"Yeah, treasure hunting!" Bingo cheered, and the two girls dashed away, leaving their half-eaten breakfast behind.

Chili shook her head and gathered the bowls. "I wonder who'll leave the bigger mess."

BLUEY: This episode of Bluey is called "Treasure Hunting."

The attic was a magical place. Boxes and trunks were stacked up to the ceiling and a circular window turned all the light in the tiny room into beams

of glistening yellow. Bandit dropped a box onto the floor and it kicked a cloud of dust right up to his nose.

"Ah…AH…*AAAAAH-CHOO!"*

"Bless you!" said Bluey and Bingo.

"Thanks," Bandit replied.

Bluey adjusted her slouch hat. "I do hope you're enjoying the tour, ma'am."

"Oh yes," said Bingo, nodding.

Bluey slung her rubber pickaxe over her shoulder. "It's said that this cave is home to a treasure thousands of years old, and no one's been able to find it."

"Do you think we could find it?" Bingo asked, squeezing her play camera.

"Maybe. That's why I'm leading this expedition. I've brought along the best digger money can buy."

Discover more

Anime

Fan fiction author

Comics fan fiction

Bluey gestured to Bandit, who was looking over two boxes. After a moment, he shoved one toward the opposite side of the room and said, "Bin."

The box slid to the girls and toppled onto its side. Clothes tumbled out onto the floor. "Ah, yes, what have you found here, digger?" asked Bluey.

"It's just you and Bingo's old onesies."

Bingo picked one up and inspected it. "Ooh, pretty stars."

"Why did you pack them away if we grew out of them?" asked Bluey.

Bandit shrugged, lugging another box onto a shorter stack. "I dunno. For the memories, I suppose."

"It's said that ancient dog children wore these ages before we were born," said Bluey to her customer.

"Wow," said Bingo, "will these go in your museum?"

"They very well might. It's the discovery of a lifetime!" Bluey hopped onto a nearby box and posed an explorer's pose. Sunlight rippled off her cerulean fur.

"Hey kids!" said Bandit, "Give us a hand with this one?"

"Okay!" Bluey and Bingo ran over to their father, who was trying to pull a box off a stack. "This one's heavy. I think it's got books in it." He pointed to the opposite side. "Get on that side, okay?"

"Ooh, we're actually gonna dig for real life!" said Bingo, climbing over the box to where Bandit wanted.

Bluey followed after. "Yeah, we're earning your money's worth now. Okay, digger, what do we need to do?"

"I just want you to push this gently to me so I can lower it to the floor." Bandit looked behind him and smirked. "But if you don't push it really carefully, you could set off a *booby trap."*

"Booby trap?!" Bluey gasped.

"Yeah," Bandit nodded, "then we'll be in for it, like many explorers before us. So take it easy."

"Got it. Go ahead, ma'am."

Bingo placed her hands on the box.

"Ready?" Bandit asked.

"Ready, digger," Bingo answered.

"Push!"

Bingo pushed with all her might. The box budged half an inch. Bingo took her safari hat off and tried again, grunting with the effort. She put her shoulder in it but the box gave only half an inch more. She wiped her brow. "This is hard."

"Don't worry, ma'am," said Bluey, gently pushing her sister aside. "Let me show you how someone who's good at digging does the job."

Bandit's stomach sank like a carnival drop ride. This may not end well, but it was too late to reconsider as Bluey was already pushing.

"Muscle power!" she grunted as the box began to slide toward him.

"That's it, that's it," Bandit encouraged. With every inch, he took more of a grip until the box left the stack and he was the one carrying it. "Great work! Now I'll just back up slowly…"

Bingo gasped. A stray onesie was still on the floor, and her dad was stepping backward toward it. "Digger!" she yipped, pointing. "Booby trap!"

"What?" But it was too late. Bandit placed a paw on the loose garment and slipped. "Whoa!" He stumbled to the left, arms trembling under the heavy box.

"Dodge the arrows, digger!" Bluey shouted.

Luckily for Bandit, he didn't have to do a thing. The weight of the box bid him to and fro like a ship swaying on the seas. Regaining his balance quickly became a non-option. He could only glance over at where he would be landing. "Make waaaaaaaayyy!" He crashed into another stack of boxes and he and they tumbled to the ground in a heap.

Bluey and Bingo grimaced. But when their dad slowly picked himself up, dazed, they sighed. "Let's help him out of the pit he fell in," said Bluey, jumping down.

Bingo sat on the edge first before scooting off the box and following her sister. "How similar is this to your real-life digs?" Bluey asked.

Bandit shook the stars out of his eyes. "Not too dissimilar, I suppose. It's much more like the movies up here."

Bluey grabbed his arm and heaved him onto his feet. "Bingo wasn't good at pushing the box," she said.

"Only 'cause she's smaller than you," Bandit laughed. " But look at what she is good at."

Bluey turned around. The box Bandit had carried was on its side, its contents all over the floor. Bingo picked up a large book from the pile and carried it on her head over to them.

"Well done, Bingo!" said Bandit.

Bingo eased the book off her head and onto Bandit's lap. "Just like a camel!" she laughed, then ran back to the pile to grab another.

"Wow," Bluey remarked then turned to Bingo. "Good work unpacking the chest, ma'am!"

Bandit smiled. "See? She may not push like you, but this book wasn't a problem. Give people the right circumstances, and they might surprise you."

Bluey nodded. "You're very wise, digger."

"Go on some digs like I have, you tend to gain some wisdom." Bandit opened the book and his eyes widened at the sight.

"What? Did we find the big treasure?" Bluey asked, tail wagging.

Bandit laughed. "Sure did. These photos are of my old band."

"You were in a band?" Bingo asked, easing another book onto a nearby box.

"Yeah, with my brothers in college and a bit after. You don't make it through an archaeology doctorate program without a way to blow off some steam."

"What did you play?" Bluey asked.

Bandit pointed at a picture showing the whole band posing with their instruments. "Well, we were a rock band, so uncle Rad played bass, uncle Stripe was the drummer, and I played guitar and sang."

"You *sang?!"* Bluey and Bingo exclaimed.

"I mean we all did," Bandit removed a picture from its sleeve, "but I sang out front."

Bluey and Bingo looked at the picture their dad chose. It had to have been taken in the middle of one of their concerts. Stripe was battering the drums, Rad grooving along with his big red bass. And there was Bandit in the middle, mullet in effect, strumming a mighty chord and likely belting a mighty note.

Bingo could almost hear the crowd cheering through the picture.

"Ah, good times, that was," said Bandit, wistful honey coating his voice.

Bluey looked at her dad skeptically. "But this morning, your singing wasn't very good."

Bandit sighed and stroked Bluey's ears. "Still on about that, eh? Well, this was 20 some odd years ago. I'm a bit out of practice. We stopped the band because we all got jobs and didn't have the time. We had to grow up. And then me and your mum had you squirts so now I super don't have the time."

"Do you miss the band because of us?" asked Bingo, looking away shyly.

Bandit went over and scooped her up in his arms. "No, kid, not at all. I wouldn't trade you lot for fame, fortune, or playing the Opera House."

"Dad, look!" called Bluey. She was peeking behind another stack of boxes near the corner and reaching for something.

"What'd you find, Dr. Heeler?" Bandit asked, putting Bingo down.

Bluey dragged a black case from behind the stack and out into the light of the window. "I think I found the lost treasure!"

Bandit gasped. "It can't be…" He walked over and took the case in his paws. Rubbing some of the dust off the front, he could feel memories rushing back to him. He unzipped the case and slowly lifted the lid. And there it was.

Bluey saw a twinkle in her dad's eye as he lifted a brown and black guitar from the case, strap dangling from one side. "What is it?" she asked.

"It's my old guitar, my Burgundy Beauty. I didn't know we still had it."

"Ooh, it's pretty," said Bingo, watching the finish glisten in the sun.

"I wonder if it's still in tune," Bandit said, sitting down on a box and resting the guitar on his lap. He strummed it delicately and winced at the discordant sound that resulted.

Bluey and Bingo laughed. "Oh dear, definitely not," Bandit sighed.

"Can it be fixed?" Bluey asked.

"Yeah, no problem. That's what these things are for." Bandit tapped the headstock where the tuning machines were and started turning them, as hundreds of times tuning up powered his muscle memory.

As the strings got higher and then lower, Bluey wondered if it could be made right. It had probably sat up here for years without being touched. And who even knew if her dad still knew how to play the thing?

But then she heard his voice in her head from earlier. *"Give people the right circumstances, and they might surprise you."*

"Give people the right circumstances, and they might surprise you," Bluey repeated out loud. Just then a pretty sound made her ears perk up. Her tail began to wag happily as her dad strummed a few chords from the old guitar, and beautiful music seemed to fill the room.

"Just like a bike," said Bandit, pumping a fist. Even if it had been years, the music never seemed to have left. He looked at Bluey and nodded. "'Atta girl."

Suddenly, his phone buzzed. Snatching it and looking at the new notification, he stood upright. "Ooh, biscuits! I forgot I had a meeting right now! Gotta dash, we'll get back to this later." And off he ran to his office, still holding the guitar.

Later in the day, after all of his tasks had been taken care of and they all resigned to clean the mess they made and leave the attic clearing for another time, Bluey walked by Bandit's office. She heard a fun sequence of chords and stopped. Creeping up and putting her ear to the door, she could hear Bandit singing.

I've got a new apartment baby
And it protects me from the lonely whistling streets

As her tail swung to the tempo, she thought, these circumstances seemed right for her dad, and he wasn't such a bad singer after all.

And I've got a new apartment baby
The interior color is red
And my only friend is my stereo receiver
Playing my favorite song all night long

She spun around and began to dance along.

Review

Share: Email . Facebook . Twitter

Story: Follow Favorite

Author: Follow Favorite

Discover more

Books

Contrast: Dark . Light

Font: Small . Medium . Large . XL

"Come on, Bingo! *Pull!"*

"I *am,* Bluey!"

TV
Family-Oriented Shows

It wasn't uncommon to hear joyful laughing and squealing coming from the Heeler backyard, especially when close family paid a visit. The source of the noises of merriment this time was Bluey and Bingo engaged in a fierce Tug-O-War with their young cousin

Socks

. The 2-year-old Heeler had a tight grip on the

rope

and was not letting up.

"'Atta girl, Socks!" called her father, Stripe.

Chilli, Bluey's mom, was astounded. "For going against kids twice her size, Socks is hangin' tough."

"Yeah, she'll drag me round the room admin' for dinner every night. Isn't she something?" Stripe couldn't keep pride out of his voice.

Discover more

rope

Babies & Toddlers

Cartoons

"This is something," said Chilli, continuing to watch.

Bluey felt a tickle in her nose. She sniffed but it only grew in intensity. "Ah... ahhhh...

"Bluey, no!" said Bingo, feeling the rope slipping in her paws.

"AH-CHOO!" Bluey fell backward at her sneeze, and Socks gave a mighty tug. It shocked Bingo so much that she was dragged to the turf by it, ending their match decisively.

"Hooray!" cheered Stripe and Socks' big sister Muffin.

"Bless you!" said Chilli.

"Aw, biscuits!" Bingo grumbled.

"Kids!" said Bandit from his post on the grill. "Sausages are ready!"

All the Heelers disappeared into the house, except for Socks who continued chewing on the rope in earnest.

It was so much fun to chew that she didn't even notice anyone had left until she felt herself being hoisted by Bluey.

TV
Family-Oriented Shows

"Let's go, Socks," she grunted, carrying her cousin inside, rope trailing behind them all the way.

BLUEY: This episode of Bluey is called "Dog Teeth."

All were gathered up on the balcony at the picnic table, with the kids congregating at their own table. Sausages and trimmings were distributed generously and thus the feast began. As Bingo chomped her sausage, she noticed Socks seemed more interested in chewing on the rope than eating.

"Uncle Stripe?" she asked after swallowing her bite. "Why is Socks still playing Tug-O-War?"

All the adults couldn't help but chuckle. "Socks ate before we arrived, so we brought that so she'd have something to do at the table." Stripe turned to Bandit and Chilli. "She's teething," he said, and they nodded.

"What's *teething?"* Bingo asked.

"Well," said Bluey, pointing to the sharp incisors she had. "You know how your dog teeth got in your mouth? They grew there!"

"That's…one way to put it, dear," Chilli said with a chuckle before turning to Bingo. "It's a bit of a sore process so a toy to chew takes the toddler's mind off the pain for a while."

Discover more

TV Family-Oriented Shows

Family Law

Dogs

"A dog's teeth are his pride and joy," said Bandit.

Dogs

"Really?" Bluey asked.

"You bet!" said Stripe, standing up.

Chilli and Trixie shared a look. "Here they go," they said.

"Our special sharp dog teeth show we're tough," Stripe continued, flexing his arm. "Someone who can protect his family from anything."

"The mark of a real dog's dog, passed down from our ancestors," said Bandit, rising up himself. "With our pearly whites…"

"We win the fight!" Stripe finished.

The two slammed their paws on the table and growled. *"Grrrrrrrrr!"*

All the kids showed their appreciation by hooting and hollering aplenty and Bandit and Stripe joined in. The womenfolk rolled their eyes.

"You two are full of yourselves," Trixie laughed. "That's so outdated."

"No one even needs dog teeth anymore," Chilli concurred.

"Says you," said Bandit. "What if one day I just wanna bite something?"

"And when has that day ever come in the thousands of times I've heard that excuse?" Chilli asked.

Bandit paused. He knew she had him there. "Er…i-it'll come! I've kept 'em 'cause I know I'll need 'em." He stuck his snout in the air.

"I know!" said Bluey. "Let's find a reason for Dad to use his

dog

teeth."

"Yeah!" Bingo cheered. They hopped down and dashed away.

"'Atta girls!" Bandit cheered. "See? Dog teeth can be useful and I don't even have to prove it."

"This can only end well," Chilli sighed.

The first stop was the

fence

where they could see Lucky's dad Pat lounging in his backyard, sipping a cold beverage.

"Lucky's dad?" Bluey called out.

Pat peeked out of his sunglasses and waved at them. "Bluey! Bingo! How's it hangin'?"

"Good!" said Bingo. "Could we ask you something?"

Pat got up and walked to the fence. "Yeah, no worries. What's up?"

"We're trying to find out what you can use dog teeth for," Bluey explained.

Discover more

Footwear

Rope

Patio, Lawn & Garden

"You've used your dog teeth before, right?" asked Bingo.

Dogs

"Sure have. In fact, I got a great story. Bingo, you're gonna play Janelle."

Bingo jumped for joy. "Yay, play story!"

"And Bluey, you'll be this big meanie."

"Ooh, okay! Who will you be, Lucky's dad?"

Pat climbed over the fence and tumbled into the Heeler's backyard. "I'll be me, of course! Now, hold my hand, Bingo." Bingo ran over and took Pat's paw. "Check it- it was back in college, you see, and me and Janelle were at a party for the cricket World Cup final. We were dancing." Pat began humming a danceable tune and shook his tail to the beat. Bingo danced along too, giggling all the while. "Then suddenly, this big meanie comes over and says 'I can dance better than you can!'"

Bluey walked up and pointed at Pat. "I can dance better than you can!"

Pat crossed his arms. "So I said, 'Hey, shove off, mate! She's here with me.'"

Bluey grabbed Bingo's hand. "Come on, babe, let's party!"

"And so…I flashed my teeth at him." Pat crouched down to Bluey's level and growled at her playfully.

"Eeeek! Sharp dog teeth!" Bluey squealed.

"Then I chased him around the party!" said Pat, and he and Bluey proceeded to run around the backyard for a spell before he tackled her and they fell to a heap, laughing until their bellies ached. "The end," he panted.

"Hooray!" Bluey and Bingo cheered.

"Good story, Pat!" called Bandit from the balcony. "Your dog teeth showed that meanie what for!"

"Do you still scare meanies away with your dog teeth?" Bluey asked.

Pat rubbed the back of his neck. "Actually, I don't. I don't have 'em anymore."

"What?" Bandit exclaimed. "You still had 'em when we graduated! You still owe me for biting my tail at the ceremony!"

Bluey and Bingo giggled. Everyone turned to look at Pat and a little shade of red shone through his yellow coat. "Tell us that story!" said Bluey.

"Er…oop! Lucky's calling me. See ya!" And Pat was back over the fence before anyone could say another word.

"I guess his dog teeth weren't that important after college," said Chilli.

"He never even bit the bloke!" Bandit groused. "How's a dog like him who I've known for years not have his teeth?"

Ding-dong!

"I'll get it," said Bandit, Bluey followed after.

"Bingo, before you run off," Aunt Trixie called, "can you help us wash up lunch?"

Bingo waved back. "Okay, aunt Trixie!"

When Bandit answered the door, a bushy black and white Border Collie was standing there. "Hey, Bandit, could you give me a jump? My car won't start."

"Oh, yeah, sure thing, mate," said Bandit.

"Oh, Mackenzie's dad?" Bluey asked as they went down the stairs into the front yard.

"Yeah?"

"I'm trying to figure out what you can use dog teeth for." She looked over and saw her dad heading to the garage. After she saw him disappear inside, she turned back. "I think dad's worried that his don't have a use anymore."

"Gotcha," Mackenzie's dad nodded. "Well, I did have a use for them. At my last job, in fact."

"What did you do?"

"I was a sheep herder for a big farm back in New Zealand, so I had to make sure the sheep didn't wander off in the pasture."

"Did you show them your

dog

teeth?" Bluey asked.

"Sometimes. I'd even bark at 'em. But if they wouldn't listen, I'd have to pick 'em up by their scruff and bring 'em back in line. Here, I can show you if you'd like."

Bluey's tail wagged. "Yeah! Can I be the sheep?"

"Right-o! Here we go."

Bluey felt a gentle pinch at the back of her neck as she was hoisted up into the air. "Baa!" she bleated, wiggling around.

"Come on, cheeky sheep!" said Mackenzie's dad through a full mouth. He trotted over to the porch and set Bluey down gently on the steps. "Just like that. The teeth helped me get a grip through all that wool."

Discover more

Fencing

Fiber & Textile Arts

Biological Sciences

"Hee hee! That was fun!" Bluey cheered. "So do you still pick sheep up?"

TV

"Not really. I got a different job when we moved here. Then when Mackenzie came along, I wasn't doin' much herding. So I got rid of the dog teeth."

"What?!" said Bandit behind them. They both jumped. "You don't have your teeth either? I thought you still had sheep."

"Only a couple. And they don't do much wanderin', do they?"

"Ugh, not again!" Bluey grumbled. She trudged inside and shut the door behind her.

The Border Collie stared. "W-was it somethin' I said?"

Bandit sighed. "Don't worry about it, okay? Let's get your ute goin'." As he slung the jumper cables over his shoulder, he was beginning to feel his own dog teeth in his mouth. He knew he cleaned his teeth well that morning but it felt like something was there that shouldn't be. If his friends didn't keep their dog teeth, where did that leave him?

Along the way to the playroom, Bluey ran into Stripe.

"How'd it go at the door?" he asked.

"Mackenzie's dad doesn't have his dog teeth either," said Bluey.

"That's so weird. That guy always seemed like a rough and tumble kinda dog."

Bluey tapped her foot. "I think dad's more worried now than when I started."

"Ya know, back when me and your dad were kids, every guy kept their dog teeth. Your grandpa Bob even told us we weren't real

unless we had 'em."

"Really?"

"Yeah," Stripe nodded, kneeling down. "Every day, he'd tell us when we cleaned our teeth. Wanted us to be able to 'fight for our future wives' as he

called it. Your aunt Trixie likes to tell me how ridiculous he was, and maybe he was. But you know who always listened to grandpa Bob?"

"Who?"

"Rad. If anyone tried to be the dog grandpa Bob wanted us to be, it was him."

Dogs

"Hey, that's a great idea!" Bluey dashed out of the room.

"Uh, where are you going?" said Stripe, running after.

"Let's FaceyTime uncle Rad!"

The little spinny thing on the screen spun and spun as the tablet worked its internet magic.

"This'll settle it once and for all," Stripe said.

"And I can make dad feel better!" Bluey agreed.

The spinny thing went away and a split second later, Radley, the eldest Heeler brother appeared, a towel covering his usual poofy hair apart from his yellow cowlick. *"Hello?"* he greeted.

"Uncle Rad!" said Bluey, tail wagging.

Radley smiled and waved at them. *"Bluey! Stripe! What's up?"*

"You look like mum out of the shower!" Bluey giggled.

"I just got out of it," he said, patting his towel bun. *"This is how I dry my hair. So what's new?"*

"Well, we'd like to ask you something-"

"Bluey!" called Bandit, closing the front door. "Where'd you go?"

"In here!" She waved him over.

"Bandy! It's Rad! We're gonna ask him about his dog teeth," said Stripe.

"Oh, you beauty!" Bandit bounded over and bent over into the camera frame. "So Rad, spill it. Been tryin' to find someone who thinks

dog

teeth are still useful and I know you're the dogliest dog of us all."

Radley rubbed the back of his neck. *"Heh, ya don't say."*

"You must still have *your* dog teeth. Shiny and pointy, eh?" Bluey asked.

"Yeah, you got 'em, right?" said Stripe, leaning into the screen. Bluey followed and soon, all three of them took up the entire camera frame.

Radley was taken aback. *"Um, er...no. I don't got 'em."*

In shock, Bluey, Bandit, and Stripe lost their balance and faceplanted on the coffee table, knocking the tablet off its perch.

Radley jumped upon suddenly seeing the Heeler's ceiling onscreen. "Uh, you okay?"

Bandit propped himself and the tablet up first. "What?!" he shouted. "You were daddy's boy! You made us keep our teeth clean because he told you to!"

"I've been using the expensive toothpaste for years!" Stripe said with a smirk.

"W-well, I've just come to realize I was pushy about that stuff. When you think about it, it's kinda silly dad thought only a couple of teeth made you dogly." Radley held his arm aloft and flexed it, showing the muscle it had. *"I've got other ways of showing* that."

"Silly?!" Bandit howled. "This is *outrageous!* It's like they don't mean anything to *anyone* anymore!" And Bandit stormed off, grumbling and muttering incoherently.

"Whoa, big bro!" said Stripe, chasing after Bandit.

"Aww, I made it worse," said Bluey, her ears drooping.

"...I think I'm missing something here," said Radley.

"I tried to find a use for dog teeth so dad could feel better about his. Lucky's dad doesn't have his anymore, and Mackenzie's dad doesn't either." Bluey rested her arms on the counter and plopped her head on them. "I couldn't help dad."

"It's okay, Bluey. You did your best, but I think this is something your dad has to handle on his own."

"What do you mean?"

"Well, it's something your grandpa Bob instilled in us when we were kids. Sometimes it's just hard for people to break out of what they're used to hearin'. But if you let him know you love him, with or without the teeth, that'll bring him around."

Bluey rose out of her pout. "Are you sure?"

"You bet, squirt," Radley nodded. *"I learned it's not your teeth that make you, it's your heart."*

Bluey smiled at that.

TV
Family-Oriented Shows

"You should put that on a t-shirt, Rad," said Trixie. Bluey turned around. She, Chilli, Bingo and

Socks

were coming down the stairs.

"Mum!"

"Come on, let's go cheer up your dad."

When Stripe and Bandit reached the backyard, the elder Heeler was still muttering to himself.

"Right," said Stripe, stopping in his tracks. "I was playing along at first, but you're actually torn up about this, aren't ya?"

Bandit slowed to a halt, and his shoulders slumped. He then sat down and hugged his knees. Stripe padded over slowly and took a seat next to his brother.

"I know it's a silly thing, and I know having no teeth suits me mates better. But...I dunno. I like how I look with my dog teeth, they make me feel tough."

"They remind you of dad," Stripe observed.

Bandit nodded. "Yeah. See right through me." They say there for a moment, watching birds flutter by. "I just…d'ya reckon he'd be disappointed in me if I did get rid of 'em?"

"I think he'd say 'Ya can't count on me for that, Bandy.'"

The two Heelers laughed for a little bit at Stripe's impression and by the time they calmed down, they were wiping tears from their eyes.

Bandit sighed and stood up. Stripe did as well. "Thanks, little brother," Bandit said.

"No worries, big brother." Stripe placed a hand on Bandit's shoulder. "Whatever ya do, just know I love ya."

Bandit smiled. "Me too."

When Bluey, Bingo, Chili and Trixie made it to the back porch, Stripe and Bandit were standing by the tree, locked in a hug.

Chilli stepped onto the stairs but Bluey held a hand out to stop her. "What's up, Bluey?" she asked.

"Just like uncle Rad said," Bluey responded, smiling. "Dad figured it out himself."

Bandit broke the hug when he felt a tug at his leg. Looking down, he saw Socks holding out her

rope

, her growing

dog

teeth showing in her smile. "Play tug, unca Bandy?"

Bandit picked up the little pup and suddenly, his dog teeth felt right at home, like they always were. "You bet, mate."

MINISODE: Catchphrase by UncaAJ

Cartoons » Bluey Rated: K, English, Humor, Bingo, Chilli/Mum, Words: 396, Published: Sep 7, 2025

1

This Bluey Minisode is called "Catchphrase."

Chilli Heeler opened the dishwasher and wondered why she ever got her hopes up. Every dish packed inside the two racks was clean, yes, but they were all still there. This meant that the burden of returning them to the cabinets fell on her since Bandit and Bluey were, conveniently, out shopping at the moment.

Well, it didn't fall entirely on her.

"Bingo, can you help me unpack the dishwasher?" she called to her youngest pup.

Bingo's small bark echoed from the den. "I'm coloring a picture!"

Chilli leaned against the cabinet and crossed her arms. "Come on, Bingo, it's gotta be done."

"I'm not interesting in that!" Bingo complained.

Chilli smiled. Was the little flub she always made with that word charming? Yes. Did it help this situation? No. "You could do with a new catchphrase. Now, let's go. It won't take long."

Bingo sighed. "Okay, mama."

Chilli nodded and grabbed a plate. When she turned to the kitchen doorway, there was Bingo, a puzzled look across her snout.

"What's a…catchphrase?" said the little heeler.

Chilli handed her a bowl and stopped to think for a moment. "Well, er, it's like a phrase that you say all the time so it becomes your trademark, how people know you by."

"Like how Bluey likes to say 'for real life'?" asked Bingo.

Chilli set down a stack of plates. "Yeah, just like that. Or when your dad says-"

"Aw, biscuits," said Bingo in her best dad voice. She slouched to emphasize her impression.

Chilli laughed at her daughter's show. "That's good, Bingo! You've got it."

"I learned something new!" Bingo picked up a plastic cup from the top rack, tail wagging all the way and the two settled into a rhythm with their work.

After a little while, when they were almost done, Bingo set a bowl down on the counter. "So, mum?" she asked.

"Yes, honey?" said Chilli.

"Is your catchphrase, 'Unpack the dishwasher'?"

Chilli fumbled a mug and it splashed into the sink. She turned around, eyebrow raised at Bingo. The little pup covered her snout to not overwhelm herself with giggles. A moment passed before she let the laughs take her over and took off. "Come 'ere, you cheeky dog!" Chilli called, running after her.

MINISODE: The Switcharoo by UncaAJ

Cartoons » Bluey Rated: K, English, Humor & Family, Bluey, Chilli/Mum, Bandit/Dad, Words: 713, Published: Sep 7, 2025

This Bluey Minisode is called "The Switcheroo."

"Crumbed steak, I'm so late!" worried Bandit Heeler, frantically throwing stray papers all around his office. "Where are they, where are they?" He tore each shelf, cabinet, and open table space apart yet had come up empty, and his friends were waiting on him, as evidenced by Pat's earlier annoyed text. Poking his head into the hallway, he looked toward the kitchen. "Chilli, have you seen my Dungeons & Dogsters things?"

"They're in the den, honey!" his wife called back. "Right where you left them last time."

Bandit ran downstairs, panting, and skidded to a halt. Immediately, he spotted a stack of paper on the side table closest to the kids' playroom. Chilli was right, as she often was. He snatched them in his paws and dashed out. The quickest way to Pat's was by hopping the fence in the backyard, just through the playroom. It was a quick, straight, clear shot that would waste no more time than he had already.

At least he thought it was a clear shot.

Bluey set the purple crayon down and held up her latest masterpiece to admire. "How lovely," she beamed. She placed it gingerly on top of three other drawings, taking care not to crease them, before taking hold of the stack and standing up. "I'm going to show these to mum." With pride across her snout, she started walking toward the large entryway toward the den.

Discover more

Games fan fiction

Anime

Fan fiction platform

As Bandit reached the kiwi rug in the middle of the playroom, he heard a sharp yelp in front of him. Try as he might, he could not apply the brakes quickly enough. With a pained grunt, he received the full brunt of a small heeler head to his gut and flopped onto his side, the paper in his hand released into the air.

"Ow," said Bluey.

Sitting up quickly while clutching his aching belly, he found his pup sitting on the floor and rubbing her head, paper strewn all around them. He immediately held out a hand to her. "You all right, Bluey?"

"Yes, I'm fine," said Bluey, gripping her dad's paw as he pulled her upright.

He ruffled her ears. "Sorry about that, squirt, but I'm in a rush!" He scooped up the pieces of paper closest to him and legged it off the patio and into the backyard. "Keep it real!"

Bluey waved as her dad climbed the fence and tumbled into Lucky's dad's backyard. She laughed. It was always funny when he did that.

When Bluey walked into the kitchen, her mom was tending to a boiling pot on the stove. "Mum, why is dad in a hurry?"

"He got off work a bit late and tonight's when he plays Dungeons and Dogsters with his friends," said Chilli, shaking some Italian herbs into the pot.

"He bumped into me as he was running off," Bluey giggled.

"Oooh, you okay?"

"Yup. I was just coming to put these on the fridge." She held out the paper to her mom with a smile.

"Wackadoo! Let's see 'em." Chilli took the pictures to look at, then raised an eyebrow. They were not, in fact, pictures. "Bluey, these are your dad's Dungeons and Dogsters sheets. He needs these to play the game."

"What?" said Bluey, snatching them back and thumbing through them. "But I had my pictures before I bumped into dad!"

"Okay, what happened after?"

"He helped me up then grabbed the paper near him and ran off. I saw him go into Lucky's house."

"That means-" Chilli suddenly gasped. She ran to the window and looked toward Pat's house. Not a Bandit in sight. He was gone and so were Bluey's drawings. Knowing him, he wouldn't come back for them even if it would take five minutes. "Oh, biscuits."

"Mum?"

"Yes, Bluey?"

"What's on those sheets?"

"Things about the character he plays as in the game, what he looks like, his magical powers, that stuff."

"Oh." Bluey smiled. "I hope he likes playing with a Heeler dressed in big red boots and fairy braids riding a unicorn, then."

The two laughed. "Knowing your dad," Chilli said, "he'll make it work."

Words: 24k+, Favs: 1, Published: Sep 5, 2025 Updated: Sep 7, 2025

1

Chapter 1: The Brekkie After

SUMMARY: After a bombastic evening free of kids, everyone wakes up hungover and grumpy and it's up to Bandit to bring his friends back to life with a rousing breakfast.

The morning light crept into Bandit's vision and seared his eyeballs. All at once he became painfully aware of how bad he felt. Time for his own version of the "Checklist."

Dry mouth? Check. Throbbing headache? Check. Back aching from sleeping on Stripe's floor and not his comfy bed? Double check.

Time to lay back. The show's not going on today.

"Ugh…babe?" he croaked. "I did it again."

His wife Chilli didn't move from where she lay next to him. "Me too," she sighed.

Discover more

Anime & Manga

Desserts

FictionPress Twitter feed

"Me three," groaned Stripe from the couch.

Bandit shrugged. "Well, that's not too bad, I suppose."

At that moment, a chorus of moans erupted from all the adults splayed out in all corners of Stripe's living room, the casualties of the kid-free get-together they had last night that went a little too long and a little too crazy.

"Biscuits," Bandit hissed. "Spoke too soon." They were all irresponsible and were paying for it now. If he didn't interact with any kids today, it would be a blessing.

BANDIT: "This episode of Bandit is called "The Brekkie After."

Bandit massaged his forehead with his fingertips as he eased himself upright. Bright light assaulted his eyes as if the sun was right in his face. "Why did we think this was a good idea?"

"Can someone get the shade?" said Stripe, his strong bark barely a grunt today.

"Got it," said Bandit. He dragged his lead paws behind the couch to the patio door. Pulling the shade across the glass felt like heaving a heavy rock across a swamp. He sighed with the relief of a dimmer living room.

"My towel is still wet," said Wendy, rolling off the other couch and flopping onto the floor.

Pat scrubbed board game pieces off his chest and held up a bank note to show everyone. "Still have the bet I won when I dared you to jump in the pool." He then let his arm go limp on the side table, accidentally knocking an empty beer can onto the floor. "Oops."

"Only because Bandit dared to get cheeky with me," Wendy grumbled.

"Seems to happen a lot at Heeler get-togethers, eh? The pool, I mean," said Bandit, before feeling the roof of his mouth and making a yucky face. "Feels like there's slime in my mouth."

"Nah, that's from when you ate a whole jar of peanut butter faster than Pat," said Josh.

"Blegh!" said Pat. "That stuff's only good in small amounts and on crackers."

Bandit leaned back and felt his back crack satisfyingly. He saw Josh Border Collie shiver and wince, which meant he was awake too. "I suppose since I'm the only one up, I'll go put the kettle on and get brekkie goin'." He shot a smug look over his shoulder as he stepped gingerly out of the living room. "You lot just lay there and have a think about what you did."

"You as well," said Chilli, sending that look back at him. "I recall this party being your idea."

Bandit gulped. "Yes, babe," he said as he trudged to Stripe's kitchen.

Discover more

Comics fan fiction

Cartoons

Comics

"Well, I might have a shower then," said Josh, sitting up rapidly, and collapsing back down just as fast. "Ugh, room's spinnin'. Never mind."

"Get in line, Josh," said Wendy, shooting him a death glare with all the energy she had left.

The sink water filling up Stripe's electric kettle sounded like a churning waterfall to Bandit's sensitive ears. His headache rumbled inside him with the ferocity of a rolling timpani as he shut off the tap and placed the kettle on its perch to come to a boil. He then carefully placed the stray wine glasses on the bar into the sink before peering back through the entryway to the goo-like adults who had barely moved. "Stripe, what should I make for brekkie?"

"Could you make hangover eggs?" Stripe asked. "Those always do the trick."

"What? No!" Pat protested, scrunching his snout. "That's disgusting."

"This isn't like college, Pat," Stripe rebutted, "I got more in my fridge now than just tomato sauce and day-old dim sims."

"Don't matter. Bandit'll still put anything he wants in there, even stuff that doesn't go together. Remember when he put instant noodles and anchovies in it after the '99 Winter Social? Blegh!"

"Never stopped you from lickin' your plate clean every time, did it?" Bandit quipped.

Pat stuttered and the whole room mustered as much laughter as they could in their hungover state.

Bandit's headache lightened slightly and his tail twitched with pride. "I've 'improved' the recipe through the years so just lay back and let the chef make some magic, alright?"

"Righto," Pat chuckled, not willing to argue anymore.

Bandit nodded and went to grab some ibuprofen from a cabinet he knew was far out of reach for Muffin and Socks. The kettle clicked, signaling the water

was ready. Just in time, thought Bandit. "And take some ibuprofen," he told Pat. "It'll take your crank away."

Pat rolled his eyes and looked at Chilli. "Bandit sure is somethin', eh?"

Chilli smiled. "Yeah. The best."

After tea and ibuprofen were dispersed around the room, everyone seemed to come out of zombie mode. Of course, Bandit knew this was merely a chisel to the hangover when they needed a jackhammer. The kids were coming back from his big brother Rad's pad later, so onto that brekkie.

The Faceytime jingle played on the tablet on the counter. Speak of the devil, and he shall ring, especially when you're preoccupied with searching through Stripe's refrigerator. He ducked away from the fridge to tap the green call button then returned to rummaging his paws through the vegetable drawer.

"How goes it, little brother?" greeted Rad in his usual sunny manner.

Cradling a green pepper, spinach, mushrooms, and bacon in his arm, he shut the fridge and turned to the tablet. He nodded to his brother on screen and tried to smile as he set the stuff on the counter. He silently wished that he didn't look like he hadn't slept in days, but perhaps the blue and red heeler mix wouldn't notice. He was a little absent-minded at times.

"Whoa, you look like you haven't slept in days," Rad laughed.

Well, throw that out the window. "Perceptive this morning, are we?" said Bandit, rubbing his eyes.

"Did you and your mates do it again?"

"Yeah, we did. Hope the kids ran you ragged as well," said Bandit with a playful sneer.

"Yeah, I bet. Nah, it's all good. We gave 'em enough games to ensure they slept through the night. In fact, Bluey's the only one up right now. She went on a run with me."

Bluey scampered into the frame and waved. *"Sure did!"*

Bandit gave a thumbs up. "Good on ya, kiddo!" Didn't matter if he was hungover or not, a grin from his oldest pup made feel light as a feather every time.

"Are you alright, dad?" Bluey asked, moving in closer.

Bandit rubbed the back of his neck. "Yeah, we just got to bed late last night."

"Everyone?"

"Yeah, everyone."

Bluey raised an eyebrow. *"That happens a lot at Heeler parties, doesn't it?"*

A cold sweat formed on Bandit's back. He had forgotten he used that excuse once before. He'd better hop off before any more questions were asked.

Luckily, Rad was on top of it as he pet Bluey on the head. *"Alright, I'll take care of brekkie for the kids. You just make sure everyone else is right as rain, you hear?"*

Bandit nodded. "Will do."

"Bye, dad!"

"See ya, Bluey!" With that, they disappeared from the tablet.

"Was that Rad?" asked Stripe from the living room.

"Sure was," said Bandit. "Bluey's up so I better make this quick." He got to work chopping the bacon into lardons and the pepper into a fine dice.

"Hey, mate," said Pat, wandering in, mug in hand. "Top us off, could ya? Everything still tastes like peanut butter."

Bandit smiled. "No worries."

After his mug was refilled, Pat took a seat at the bar and sipped the warm liquid, swishing it around his mouth to rid every last speck of peanut butter. "If my kids ever find out what we grown-ups do when they're not around, I couldn't look 'em in the eye again."

"Bluey nearly did, I think," Bandit gulped.

"Ha! Insightful nose, that one."

"Did I ever tell you about what happened when me and Chilli were here for New Year's?" Bandit asked. Pat shook his head and took another sip. "So in walks Bluey and Bingo, looking to play Whale Watching with us-"

"Hang on," Chilli called, making her entrance. "You cook, I wanna tell him this story."

Bandit winked at her. "Fine by me, babe. You tell it better anyhow."

Josh tapped his foot as he sipped his tea, the warm drink putting him in better spirits. *"Will we ever, doo doo-doo doo, be that funky again?"* he hummed to himself.

"You're going to get that silly song stuck in my head again," Wendy barked playfully.

Josh shrugged. "You kiddin'? That was the best part of the night right there."

"I didn't sound too bad, did I?" asked Stripe.

"'Course not!" came Bandit's voice. "I'm just glad you sang with me at all!"

"Just like old times," Stripe called back.

A content silence settled around the room, broken only by the distant sizzling of bacon and the release of its sweet, smoky aroma into the air. The quiet was welcome among them all, not only because of their still sensitive heads but because it was such a rarity in their households since they had kids. All those old times when they had not a care in the world were now left behind, having made way for the new times and the joy and responsibility they now shared.

Wendy piped up. "Yes, I suppose it was a good song…do you think we will ever be that funky again?"

Stripe stretched his neck, feeling it pop. "Nah."

Josh shook his fluffy head. "Nope."

"Not a chance!" Pat exclaimed.

Everyone laughed, wistful nostalgia echoing between them until they all settled again into their tired, hungover selves.

"That's okay, though," said Stripe. "I like how funky we are now."

Wendy nodded and sat back. "Yes, I agree."

"It's certainly easier on me head, I'll tell ya that for free," said Josh.

"Brekkie's on!" shouted Bandit.

Soon they were all congregated at the dining table, each adult provided with a generous egg scramble on a piece of toast. Tea was refilled and they all proceeded to tuck in.
Pat didn't know what he was in for, but it was hot, it was here, and any brekkie he'd wait for back home would just be dry cereal. He picked up the toast and hesitantly took a bite.

"What do ya reckon, Pat?" Bandit asked.

Pat swallowed and couldn't help but wag his tail slightly. "I forgot you made ham and pineapple pizza a religious experience," he said, licking his chops. "I will never doubt your abilities again."

"Uss!" Bandit cheered, pumping his fist. "Still got it!"

"Good job, babe," said Chilli, squeezing his hand.

"As long as I wake up to this," said Josh through a mouthful, "Good friends and good food, I wouldn't mind doing this again. Just not too funky next time, eh?"

Everyone nodded. "Agreed."

Chapter 2: Old Dog, New Trick

SUMMARY: After saving his best friend Maynard from the jaws of a freshie, Mort Cattle is suddenly onset with feelings for his best friend. With no idea how to handle this, he calls on Bandit to help an old dog figure out what he never knew about himself.

Bandit could feel his eyelids sagging despite the high-octane action on TV. This was supposed to be the hottest new movie that all his friends were talking about, and it was boring him to sleep. Chilli, however, was on the edge of the couch and he was happy for her sake, but he'd rather watch a bone get brushed. What he wouldn't give for something to break up the monotony of the same four buff guys whose names he'd forgotten punching each other in the mouth.

The jaunty ringtone playing on Bandit's phone drew his attention away, like a song from heaven. He grabbed his phone from the armrest and saw Mort Cattle's scruffy face smiling back. "Babe, look, your dad's on the phone," he remarked.

"Hmm," said Chilli. "He's usually in bed by now."

Bandit turned the TV volume down and answered, putting Mort on speakerphone. "G'day, Mort," he greeted.

"Bandit, thank goodness!" came Mort's gruff, slightly panicked bark. *"Look, I've got something...personal to tell ya. You alone?"*

Discover more

Anime

Comics

Cookies policy acceptance

Bandit turned to Chilli and gulped. If Mort could only see the look of death his daughter just gave him. "Er, Chilli is with me. Is everything alright?"

The other end was silent for a beat. *"Ohhhh dear. Er, e-everything's fine, Chilli-dog. Maybe. I dunno. I mean-"*

"Dad, what's going on that only Bandit can hear?" Chilli asked, eyebrow raised and tone prodding.

"Look, I didn't mean anything by it. I only phoned Bandit because I know he's one o' those...multi-lovin'- no, dual...? Nah, that's not it."

"What are you on about, Mort?" Bandit asked.

"Aw, strewth, what do kids these days call it when you fancy both girls and blokes?"

"What does that have to do with anything?" Wait. Hold the phone. He looked at Chilli. "Is he...?" he mouthed.

Chilli shrugged, eyes wide. She could feel now this was as much dropped in her lap as it was Bandit's. She didn't know how this was about to go.

Discover more

Comics fan fiction

Desserts

Plays fan fiction

Mort sighed. *"Okay, listen, you know me mate Maynard, right?"*

Bandit tensed, sensing what was coming. "Yeah, he really likes fishing, eh? What about him?"

"I may or may not...have fallen for him."

"Erm...have you or haven't you?" asked Chilli. "I feel like there's no inbetween there."

"Okay, yes! I have. I mean, I don't know! Well, maybe, it's confusing. Rather- oh, biscuits and jam! I'm 65 years old! I don't know how to be double-attracted...whatever it is you are!"

Bandit massaged the bridge of his snout. "Bisexual, Mort."

"Yeah, that! I knew I heard that somewhere!"

Chilli shook her head. "Dad, when did all of this come about?"

"Umm...you two got a mo'?"

"The kids are in bed and my father-in-law's coming out. We've got all the time in the world now!" said Bandit.

Chilli even had to admit, the movie was nowhere near as good as this was likely to be.

MORT: This episode of Bandit is called "Old Dog, New Trick."

"You know me and Maynard have been mates through thick and thin. Any time I spend with him is the best part of my day. But I suppose things changed about a week ago when I went with him to his favorite fishing spot..."

Not a cloud was in the sky nor wave on the lake. Maynard, bless him, was perched on the nose of my canoe, foot on the very end. I turned away from me own fishing pole to see how he was gettin' on and I rolled my eyes. Maynard probably thought he looked like some bloomin' superhero, watching over his city.

"You're gonna fall into the lake, mate," I told him for the 10th time.

Discover more

He turned back and shook his head, his ears flopping about like they were mocking me. "I tell ya, mate, you gotta show the fish who's boss and dare 'em to bite your line. This has worked for me countless times."

"You're dreamin', mate."

"Watch me catch the biggest Barra in this lake and you're gonna eat those words."

"Tell you what, you catch anything before you fall in this lake, I'll kiss you."

Maynard huffed. "Oh, you're playing with fire now!"

Yeah, I was. I'll admit, he looked kinda cute standing there, thinking his superstition would make a difference, so I was havin' a laugh, or I thought I was. Maynard told me he was gay years ago so I figured a bit of riling up would be a funny joke. I returned to my own fishing pole thinking nothing of it.

Then out of the corner of my eye, I spied a freshie, a tiny crocodile breaching the surface. As soon as he appeared, he dipped back below. Not a rarity but not something you see every day, "Uh, Maynard? We got a freshie."

"Yankin' my chain again, are we?" he huffed.

"Seriously. I think we'd better get back to the dock."

"Oh no, you made your bet, now lie in it. I'm catchin' that bloody Barra!"

All of a sudden, I saw him lean forward, his pole bending under the weight of whatever he just hooked. "Aha! Got a bite! You know what that means!" He started reeling in his catch and I started to dread his gloating. He always does that when he's right.

And then, the boat is hit, right? A good whack underneath and we were rockin'. Maynard wobbled where he stood and tumbled tail over tea kettle into the lake. This freshie surfaced again next to the boat and snapped his jaws, hissing like mad. Maynard's hook had it snared at the top of its mouth.

"Maynard, you idiot!" I yelled as he surfaced.

"Aw, that ain't no Barra!" he whinged.

I grabbed the freshie by the snout and held his jaws shut. "Get back in here!" As Maynard heaved himself back into the boat, the freshie struggled in my arms, flailing with all its might. Keeping my grip, I slowly pulled the hook out then tossed the little bugger as far away from us as I could. I didn't see it splash down before I cranked the engine over and took off back toward the dock. Those ten seconds felt like 5 minutes, I tell ya.

When I parked the boat, I finally noticed I was heaving like crazy. Me brain was racing a hundred miles an hour. I was thinking about all we had been through together. Bunking together during the war and all the jams we'd helped each other out of. It was eerily like one of those times. All the way to him helping out when me and your mum raised you. He's a guy I'd trust with my life. I'd put him on the same level as your mum.

And then something inside me broke. It felt like a flea flew in me ear. I never once thought of any old mate that way before then and I couldn't believe it. I never thought I'd feel that way about anyone after your mum.

Discover more

FictionPress Twitter feed
Cartoons fan fiction
Writing community forum
Games fan fiction
Books fan fiction
Fan fiction author
Fan fiction platform
Fan fiction story
Books
TV fan fiction

"You okay?" Maynard said, climbing onto the dock. I turned back to his scruffy mug, the afternoon casting a glow on his soaked fur. "He didn't nick you, did he?" He certainly didn't look like someone whose life was just threatened.

I tackled him. "Nicked me?! I thought it was gonna nick you! Those freshies can bite your tail off! And you were up at the front of my boat like you were king of the world! Don't ever do that again!"

Maynard held his hands up. "Okay, okay! I'm sorry!"

Was I being unfair? Yeah, a bit. All these surfacing feelings and I was taking them out on me best friend. I stopped myself from saying anything else and helped him up.

And then he said, "It wasn't a fish, but do I still get that kiss?"

What an oaf he always was. Not a care in the world. I took all our years of friendship and planted it right on his snout, and it was as if everything clicked into place. All I can say is… I didn't hate it.

"Really?" said Bandit. "That's *all* you can say after all that?"

"Okay, that's a bit harsh. I loved it. I still can't believe I'm saying that, and it's been all I can think about all week. I feel like I'm going nutso, like I got a stomachache all hours of the day."

"Have you told him how you feel yet?" asked Chilli.

"Um…no. I haven't seen him since that kiss on the lake."

"Oh, *Mort!"* Bandit exclaimed.

"Honey!" Chilli hissed, finger to her lips.

Oh, that's right. Don't want the kids to pry into this quite yet. He turned toward the stairs and waited.

No one appeared.

"Mort," said Bandit in a lower tone, "you can't push him aside. That's the worst thing you can do. If you really feel this way about him, you gotta tell him."

Mort sighed. *"You're right. I owe him that after all he's done for me. I suppose…I was just scared of me own shadow. This came on so suddenly, I didn't know how to face it. You think you have it all figured out and then ol' mother life bowls you a dip, eh? I keep thinking it should be up to me and it never is."*

Bandit and Chilli laughed. "Yeah, dad," she said, "something like that."

"The way you talk, Bandit, figuring yourself out must've been a picnic."

Bandit so easily could've leaned into this small boost to his ego and agreed with Mort. But he couldn't lie in front of Chilli. She had a talent for sniffing that sort of thing out. "Er, not really," he said, rubbing the back of his neck."I had a fit like you the first time I realized I was falling for one of my mates. Didn't tell my mum or dad until much later. But I knew I had to share this with him otherwise it would just eat me up inside."

"What'd you do?"

"I learned a song and next time I went to his house, I played my guitar and sang it to him. I wanted to impress him so that it would at least soften the blow. He loved it, and then I told him. And I don't regret it at all."

"You mean he felt the same for you?" Mort asked.

Bandit scoffed. "Course he didn't, it was the 90s! But he still appreciated my being honest and we found a way to stay friends for a while. So yeah, you want my help? Talk to Maynard, if not tonight then first thing tomorrow, and figure out how far you wanna take this. I'm sure he'd be over the moon. You two already get on like an old married couple."

"...wow. I reckon we do. You really think I should?"

"Yeah. You're never too old to learn something new about yourself, Mort. It's just new tricks, is all. Trust me, Bluey and Bingo help teach me things every day."

There was a pause on the other end. Bandit wondered if Mort was back to second guessing himself.

"Chilli-dog?"

"Yeah, dad?"

"D'ya think your mum would be happy looking down wherever she is and seeing me with Maynard? You know I really did love her, right? And I always will."

"I know, dad," said Chilli, trying to hold back tears. "I think she'd be happy seeing you happy. Don't worry about her."

"Alright, I'll see if he's still up. He usually is. Thanks for helpin' this old dog learn a new trick, Bandit."

"Anytime, Mort."

"I'm sorry this came on so sudden, Chilli, and I appreciate you hearing me out as well."

"Of course, dad," Chilli nodded. "I love you."

"Love you too, dearest. G'night."

With that, Mort hung up. The movie was over by this point and Chilli and Bandit, both exhausted by this point but thoroughly satisfied with the turn of

events, decided to retire for the night. As they climbed up the stairs to their room, Chilli said, "So how long until Bluey and Bingo find out about this?"

"If they haven't been spying, babe, I'd say leave that up to Mort."

A week after coming out to his daughter and son-in-law, Mort decided to pay the Heelers a visit. He had gotten the hang of the ridesharing app thing since the last time and had no trouble calling his own ride into Brisbane. But this time, he ordered a car for two.

Bluey and Bingo ran out of the house and wrapped their tiny arms around Mort. "Grandad!" they cheered.

"How ya been, squirts?" Mort asked.

They pulled away and Mort crouched down to their level. "Kids, I've got some big news. Your ol' grandad's got a new true love."

"Oooh, who is she?" Bluey asked, tail wagging.

"Well, it's not a 'she' as it happens," Mort chuckled nervously. He stood up and turned back to their ride. "Come on out!"

A gray dog with scraggly fur stepped out and waved. "G'day, kids!"

"Maynard!" said Bingo.

"Maynard's your new true love?" asked Bluey.

"Sure is," said Mort, wrapping an arm over Maynard's shoulder.

"Honestly didn't think he'd ever come 'round," said Maynard.

"Oh, you," said Mort, rolling his eyes and ruffling his messy fur. Bluey and Bingo giggled. "Let's go inside, kids. I think you'll wanna hear how this came about. And it starts with me, Maynard, and a little freshie..."

Chapter 3: MINISODE: The Confession

This *Bandit* Minisode is called "The Confession."

Mort knocked three times on his best friend Maynard's cabin door. It was a short walk from his house to here and for the first time in years of making

the journey, he felt out of place. His stomach churned as he waited for the answer. He tried to grasp what confidence Bandit and Chilli gave to him earlier in the evening, but it had floated away like a piece of driftwood in the nearby lake.

Maynard opened the door, no emotion visible on his face. He was probably thinking how odd it was that a dog who could barge in any old time he wanted was taking the time to knock and wait to be invited in. "Well, well," said Maynard, hand sliding down to his hip, "I was startin' to wonder whether you'd gone missing."

Mort felt like he was a teen coming home after curfew to face the music. "Look, mate…it's late and all, but…I just gotta say this. I've been a dunderhead, and I can understand if you're miffed at me. But…I just wanna come in and explain some things if you'll allow me to."

There, he said it. Well, not it, but he still tensed his shoulders and braced for whatever would come.

Maynard smiled and placed a hand on Mort's shoulder. "Like I'd deny you anything, you old fool. Come on, I'll put the kettle on."

A few minutes later, they were seated on the couch in Maynard's slightly too cluttered living room, tea in hand and a late football match low on the TV. It all seemed like any other time between them, but it felt all too foreign to Mort due to his new revelation. Maynard meanwhile took a sip casually and turned to Mort without a thought as to what he was about to reveal.

"So what's goin' on, mate?" the wolfhound said, "you berate me, kiss me, then leave me high and dry all week. I mean, I'm sorry I was careless on the boat but it didn't seem like a big deal to me."

"Yeah, I get it," said Mort, trying to ease himself with small talk. "First freshie I've ever seen on that lake. Who knows when they moved in?"

"Won't do no good to my fishin', I'll tell ya that for free."

Mort let out a chuckle. The levity and nonchalance Maynard treated the whole event would've got on his nerves that day, but now it was taking the weight off his shoulders. This old airhead was really something else. All the more reason he had to do this now.

Mort set his mug down on the coffee table and took a deep breath in. "So look," he began, "I had to…think about some things after that. That croc was all sticks and scales but I…I dunno. I really thought it was gonna hurt ya." Mort swallowed. "And I couldn't bear that happenin' to me best mate."

Maynard set his own mug down and opened his mouth but Mort held a paw up. "Please," he said, "I just gotta keep goin' so I can get this straight." He blinked at that last word and then cleared his throat, looking away and wringing his paws in his lap. "I suppose I've come to realize 'cause of what happened that…you hold a really special place with me. I've called you my best mate all these years but even that wasn't enough. You saved my life in the jungle. You helped me meet my wife and were there when me kids were born. I'd trust you with anything. You mean as much to me as…well, as she did."

It was Maynard's turn to blink. An old dog like him as special to his best mate as Mort's wife. Was he?

Nah. He'd always dreamed of this day but had long since put it out of his mind as an impossibility. But somehow life always found a way to surprise him.

Mort looked Maynard in the eyes as what weighed him down since the lake was lifted from him, instilling a new confidence with what he was about to say next. "That's why I acted like a drongo. I was scared, of what might happen to you and what I was about to learn about myself so late in me life." Despite his unwavering voice, he felt himself glow red as all get out as he finally stood at the edge of confessing what had laid dormant in him for so long and had erupted so suddenly after a simple kiss. And what scared him now wasn't if Maynard would be accepting, goodness knew he would, but that if he would reciprocate. It brought him back to the butterflies he felt when he confessed his feelings to his late wife, rose petals coming free due to his shaking hands around the bouquet.

Discover more

Writing community forum

Movies

Privacy policy acceptance

"It don't make it right and I'm sorry but…I love you, mate. I really, really do. And…if you'd do me the kindness of going steady with me, I'd be the happiest dog in the bloomin' world."

There. He did it. If nothing else, he could say that much. Now he just had to wait for Maynard's reaction.

A swirl of emotions rattled the old wolfhound's noggin, but he chose not to display them. For such an honorable declaration, one that would make him as well the happiest dog in the world, Maynard thought it was Mort's turn to

be wound up a bit for their little tiff. Perhaps it might help his friend, no, boyfriend now, relax even. Of course it might not.

Maynard shut his eyes, took a deep breath in, and stood up. "Well, I suppose I've got one thing to say to that."

The pedestal Mort built for himself to do this came crumbling in an instant. "Y-yeah, mate?" Here we go.

"It's about time."

Mort opened his eyes. He hadn't even realized he was squeezing them shut. "C-come again?"

Suddenly he was pounced on and both dogs fell onto the couch, laughing while wrapped up in each other's arms. "I can't believe it!" said Maynard, "me best mate in the whole world fancies blokes, and not just that, he fancies me! Yes, you old fogey, I wouldn't wanna go steady with no one else but you!"

Ya mean it?" Mort asked.

Maynard nodded. "Too right, you beauty!"

As they helped each other upright, their muzzles found their way to each other and Mort felt those butterflies in his stomach again. It had gone just like he hoped it would and better. He had taken to this newfound discovery like a freshie to water, and wouldn't you know it, it was a piece of cake.

The logistics of who would live where and what sorts of things they would try with each other could be dealt with later. Mort would take this new relationship one step at a time and right now, surrounded by Maynard's coat, felt pretty darn good in his book.

Cartoons » Bluey Rated: K+, English, Humor & Family, Bluey, Bandit/Dad, Stripe, Pat, Words: 24k+, Favs: 1, Published: Sep 5, 2025 Updated: Sep 7, 2025

1

Chapter 4: Diesel's Petrols

SUMMARY: Diesel fulfills a lifelong dream by opening his own car garage after his discharge. He thinks making friends at home will be hard, but with Diesel's Petrols, it's all in a day's work.

The door to his dimly lit office opened, and Dr. Bernard, the Australian Army counselor, looked up. "Thanks for coming, Sergeant Kelpie," he greeted.

Diesel Kelpie took a seat in the cushy leather seat opposite him and held out his hand. "No worries, Dr. Bernard."

After shaking his hand, Dr. Bernard grabbed his tablet and pushed his glasses up. "So let's get right into it. How have you been since discharge?"

"Well, it was great to see my family again, let's say that first. Everything I do, I do for them. It was all I could think about on the flight home." Diesel leaned back and recalled the whirlwind of a month he'd had.

Fresh from a 12-hour flight, I felt light as a feather despite the jet-lag fuzzing the edges of my sight. It never fails, I try to catch up on sleep on the flight and somehow stay up the whole time, idling the time away with the same crummy puzzle games and the same five movies. Even still when I landed, I couldn't help but jog from the gate straight to border control, hopping like, well, an excited dog in the queue.

Once I finally made it to the luggage claim, there they were, big smiles all over. My pack, my troop. My family. I probably looked like hell with my stained fatigues and baggy eyes, but I knew it didn't matter one bit to them.

"Dad!" Rusty shouted, bolting over and jumping into my arms. I could hear the others catching up to him as I gave my little recruit a good squeeze before setting him down and letting them all in.

"Aw, missed me, eh?" I joked.

"Yeah," said Digger, the oldest.

"Missed you lots!" said Rusty.

"Thiiiiis much!" said me youngest Dusty, stretching her little arms as far as they'd go.

Then it was Pepper's turn. "Welcome home, honey."

I felt all my worries vanish with my sigh as I kissed my loving wife. "Good to be home."

"How long are you staying for?" Rusty asked.

Dusty bounced up and down. "Will you be here for my birthday?"

I gave Pepper a quick smooch then turned to the kids. "Oh yeah, I didn't mention that, did I?"

"Tell 'em, babe," said Pepper.

I knelt down to meet my kids' eyes as they all bunched together. "Well, I have a little surprise for you all. I'm here this time…for good."

"You mean…your service is done?" Rusty asked, almost pleading for it to be true.

"Yup," I confirmed. "Done and dusted."

We all met in a big hug in the middle of the baggage claim, and for the first time since hearing the news I was headed home at last, I felt like transitioning back to civilian life wouldn't be so bad.

DIESEL: This episode of Bandit is called "Diesel's Petrols."

"How have you been filling your time over the past month?" asked Dr. Bernard.

"Well, that army schedule's a part of me, so I'm still up bright and early every day. The kids keep me active with cricket, footie, the works." He chuckled and slung a leg over the other. "But that's not what you're asking, is it?"

Dr. Bernard laughed. "No, it isn't."

"For my career after service, it was a no-brainer for me. All that time fixing Jeeps, I knew I was gonna open my own garage when I got home. And bless Pepper, she was gracious enough to come on as my business partner. Signing the lease on that space was the fulfillment of a dream, so I was psyched."

"Fantastic," said Dr. Bernard. "How about friendships?"

Discover more

Plays fan fiction

Cookies

Movies

"Oh, I've kept in touch with my troop online. Couldn't do that when I was a tyke. But I promised myself something on the way home. I see Rusty talk so highly of his schoolmates on the ride home from school, so I really wanted to get to know their parents. Thought they could be my new troop. And in a way, my garage helped me do that. It started while I was out promoting the venture..."

I was taking my new shop truck on her maiden voyage with Rusty by my side. Figured it'd get the word out and drum up some customers since we were gonna open any day. We're puttering along in Paddington and suddenly, Rusty points out the window and says, "Dad, look! It's Mackenzie!"

I saw a couple o' border collies standing by the side of the road, their ute smoking. "Looks like they're broken down, kiddo," I said.

"Can we help them, dad?" Rusty asked.

"Well, if he's your friend, let's see what's up." We parked nearby and got out. Rusty greeted Mackenzie happily while I went over to his dad.

"You're Rusty's dad, right? Don't see you around much," he said.

"Yeah, discharged recently. Diesel."

"Sorry, Josh," a guy shouted, "my mechanic's booked solid today." A blue heeler and his pup walked toward us from a couple houses down.

"Biscuits," Josh muttered. "Thanks for trying, Bandit."

The Heeler pup waved at us. "Hi, Rusty!"

"Bluey!" said Rusty. "Me and Dad are spreading the word about his new garage." He pointed at the logo on my truck that Pepper designed.

"Diesel's Petrols," read Bluey. "Hee-hee! I like that name!"

"You work on cars, eh?" said Josh.

"Yeah, cars, Jeeps, copters, you name it, it's my toast and jam. I could take a look if you don't mind."

Josh shrugged and led me to the wide-open bonnet. I felt the heat on my fur immediately and recoiled back. "Poor things's overheated," I said, waving some smoke away. Now time to sniff out the problem. The army taught me that well. Let everything fall away and focus on what needs to be done.

Discover more

Privacy policy acceptance

Desserts

Cookies policy acceptance

I took a deep whiff through my nose and exhaled sickly sweet aromas, like burnt caramel. It was coolant, alright, almost like the radiator blew or a hose had popped loose and covered the engine in it. For Josh's sake, luckily it was the latter I spied immediately.

"I don't understand it. It was all right yesterday," said Josh once I regained my awareness.

"A hose popped off your rad here," I said, pointing to the dangling pipe near the main gears. "Reckon you've lost all your coolant, mate."

"Wow," said Josh. "That'll do it."

"You know, I think I have a proper clamp and some coolant in me Ute. I can have you right as rain in a tick."

Josh looked shocked. "Really? R-right now?"

I smiled. "I always like to come prepared for anything."

Josh pumped his fist, his bummed expression washing out to giddiness. "Well, thanks a bunch!"

"No worries."

It was simple to refit the hose and tighten it down properly. Then once his engine came back down to as normal a temperature as could be on the eve of summer, I topped up the coolant and gave him the go to start up. The engine tumbled for a second as the coolant recirculated but then kicked right into life. "Gotta love a rock-solid Toyota," I smirked. Hardy and excitable, just like he was.

I waited a moment to see if the hose would pop off, but it held. I shut the bonnet and gave Josh the thumbs up. He called his son over and they loaded up.

"Thanks a bunch, mate!" said Josh as I approached the cab. "What do I owe ya?"

Discover more

Fan fiction story

Books

Anime

I glanced quickly at the temperature meter. A-OK. "Ah, twernt nothin', mate," I scoffed. "All in a day's work."

I felt a tug on my arm, and I crouched down. "Yeah, mate?" I said to Rusty.

"Dad, remember what mum said? 'If you fix some stranger's car like I know you will, make sure you're paid.'"

I gulped and stood up again. Both Mackenzie and Josh were laughing. I grinned embarrassingly.

"Your mum's a smart cookie," Bandit said with a wink.

"Thanks, Mr. Heeler!" said Rusty.

I shook my head and fished a business card out of my wallet. "Okay, how's $30 sound? And you gimme a ring if your Ute ever packs in again?

"Done deal!" said Josh, quickly exchanging it for a banknote from his.

"Much obliged," I said, shaking his paw. With a wave, he was off down the road with his pup.

Not long after, I'd just finished installing the new ramp in the garage when in wheels this sturdy little Subaru. My first real walk-in. I head over and a Jack Russel steps out of it.

"G'day, mate," I said, "thanks for droppin' by. what can I do ya for?"

Do you do suspension work here?" he asked.

"Whatever's ailing your car, I can put it right."

"Oh, great!" he said, relieved.

I wondered what brought that on, but I didn't have to wonder long. The Jack Russel pushed down on his wheel arch and it didn't budge an inch. "The ride's been really rough," he continued. "My tail aches every time I drive it longer than a grocery run."

"That ain't fair dinkum. Let's put 'er on my new ramp and I'll take a look."

I helped him position the car and once it was safely in the air, I could see straight away what the problem was. "Great day in the morning, your shocks are toast! Covered in oil and stiff as stone. What on earth did you do to 'em?"

The terrier rubbed his arm, looking guilty with himself. "It's a funny story, I suppose. I took a shortcut picking my son Jack up from school-"

Discover more

Writing community forum

TV fan fiction

Anime fan fiction

"Wait, you're Jack's dad?" I exclaimed. "My son Rusty talks about a Russel named Jack all the time."

"Ha! Likewise! Good to meet you, er…"

"Diesel." I held out my hand and he shook it.

"Blake."

"So what happened exactly?" I said, motioning him toward my tool bench.

So my battery died leaving me without SatNav. This bloke called Maynard showed me a shortcut through the bush, but a sign just before said it was for 4-wheel-drive cars."

"Hmm…" I suddenly had an inkling. I went back to the car and shone my torch around the wheels. I grimaced even more. "Yeah, this is an *all*-wheel-drive car."

Blake raised an eyebrow. "Aren't they the same thing? It's got four wheels."

I almost laughed but I didn't want to do that to the poor guy. "Rookie mistake, mate. See, all-wheel-drive shifts power to all the wheels to help with traction on muddy or wet road. 4-wheel-drive is for serious off-roading like what you did on that shortcut, it looks like."

Blake sighed. "Yeah, I…had an adventurous moment. But when I came home from the markets the other day with busted eggs, my wife said I'd better bring it in. She heard about you from Josh Border-Collie."

"Issat so?" Small world. "Well, tell ya what- I have the parts here that I need. I can have you back up and running by day's end for…how's $400 and a promise to not take your car where it's not meant to go?"

Blake perked up. "Really? That'd be fantastic!"

I nodded. "All in a day's work, mate."

"Two new civilian friends, that's a good start," said Dr. Bernard.

"Thanks," said Diesel. "But it's funny." He scratched his chin and tried to gather his thoughts. "I…didn't think I was making friends at first."

"How so?"

"I guess it felt like just doing what I had to do and sending 'em on their way, nothing more, like in the army. The troop and I would bond for hours on end every day because we were together for that long. We slept on smelly cots together. I could know everything about them. I barely got to know Josh and Blake before their cars were fixed and they were off."

Diesel paused, wondering if he should even say what he was about to.

"Do you need to confide about something, Sergeant Kelpie?" Dr. Bernard asked gently, without judgment.

"Sometimes I feel…like an outsider, ya know? It used to be I was barely home before I was back overseas. The army was my world more than here and suddenly, this is my world now. I wasn't sure if Josh and Blake would remember me with how little we were able to talk. I wasn't sure I could make my place here."

"It doesn't make your interactions any less meaningful," Dr Bernard reassured. "It takes time and effort but it's very possible."

Diesel nodded. "Oh, I'm realizing that now. And what helped me change my view was that Heeler Bandit I mentioned earlier..."

As it happens, it was the day after I expressed this to Pepper and we were discussing my rates in the garage.

"The prices I'm giving aren't too low, are they, Pepper?" I said, my head hurting seeing her spreadsheets.

Pepper shook her head. "Don't worry, love, you're covering all our expenses. I just want to make sure you're charging what you're worth."

"It's never a big deal. I'm just glad I get to do this at all."

Pepper took my hand and squeezed it. "Okay, well, I think you're worth more."

"Yeah, and I know you always will."

How did I find someone so perfect, in partnership and…well, partnership? We moved in closer for a kiss until we heard someone nearby clearing their throat.

We turned to see that Heeler Bandit from the other day with his daughters, Bluey and an orange one whose name I didn't recall. "Sooooo does Rusty run off screaming when he sees smoochy-kisses?" asked Bandit.

Discover more

Comics fan fiction

Fan fiction categories

Crossover fiction

"Dad, you were kissing Mum's stinky fish breath!" laughed Bluey.

I stood up straight and saluted. "Sir!"

Pepper rolled her eyes and pushed me away. "Welcome to Diesel's Petrols. How can we help?"

"I was just passing by and I wondered if you'd give my Jeep a once-over. I'm taking the family dune racing next month and I figure you're the Jeep expert."

I chuckled. "It's a stereotype for a reason. I'll make sure you can handle everything out there. Pepper'll show you to the waiting room."

"We've got toys!" she said to the Heeler kids, and they cheered and dashed off toward the lobby, their dad following.

The hum of the lift had become music to my ears by this point and I could operate it in my sleep. Wrangler, good rugged vehicle, could literally take you anywhere. That once-over was probably the quickest one I'd ever done, even on an army vehicle. Bandit maintained it really well.

I wiped my brow with a rag and headed to the lobby. Bandit was in the middle of keeling over, clutching his chest. His kids had their hands out, wiggling their fingers at him and laughing maniacally.

I sniggered. "What's all this then?"

"Hi, Rusty's dad!" said Bluey. "Bingo and I overwhelmed him with our magic!"

Bandit looked at me. "Yeah, powerful stuff," he whispered.

"Dad," said Bingo, "you're supposed to be asleep!"
Bandit slowly came to his feet. No doubt it took longer these days with those two scamps running him ragged. I certainly knew the feeling. "Let's just call it a cliffhanger," he declared. "Am I asleep? We'll find out when we get home."

Rugged, adaptable, and fun. Just like his car.

"All good?" he asked me.

"Good to go," I said.

"Good job, there, mate."

I smiled. "All in a day's work."

I held out my hand and he shook it vigorously. Of all the blokes I shook with, his was the best so far. "Make quick work like that and I might be calling you from now on," he said.

What a compliment, especially since he already had a guy. "M-much obliged," I said, before I led him over to the computer to do his invoice.

"Only seen you at drop-off a couple of times. When'd you get back?" he asked.

"Not too long ago. It's good to be home at last. Feels like I've missed too much outta my kids' lives."

"Yeah, I feel that way when I have to be on a dig site. I'm not gone nearly as long but it's still too long."

"Truth. And it's good to really talk to someone outside of that whole world. Makes it easier to get back…to the swing of it, you know?"

"Hey, you oughta come and have a drink with me and some friends. Josh'll be there. And Blake's thankful you got his Subaru running again."

"Oh yeah, I remember them." But did they really remember me? "Well, I dunno-"

Bandit slung an arm over the counter. "C'mon, it'll be fun."

I gave it a rummage in my mind. Sounded like the perfect proposition, and so quickly after getting back. I'd hopefully have a new friend group to make reintegration easier. But it still almost felt like I was intruding on somewhere I didn't quite belong yet. I wasn't sure if I should step in.

I looked away for a moment. Bluey and Bingo had slid right into another game, involving the footy in the toy box. I laughed. "These kids make it look so easy." So easy to get along, I thought.

"Yeah, we can take a cue from them every once in a while, eh?" said Bandit.

I nodded. I'd take that step. "Sure, gimme the deets and I'll be there."

"I'm sorry, Sergeant Kelpie, but we're out of time for today," said Dr. Bernard, rising up. "But it sounds like you're making great progress with reintegration. I'm proud of ya!"
Diesel stood up. "Thanks, doc. After opening my garage and meeting Bandit and Blake and the others, it really feels like I have another troop. I know I've only just started my new life and there's so much I want to do yet, but…" He shrugged. "It's like I always say, even in the field."

"All in a day's work?" asked Dr. Bernard.

"Yeah, all in a day's work."

Diesel opened the door to the pub and cased the joint for the table where Bandit and his friends were. Catching waving hands out of the corner of his eye, he saw they were all smiling and waving at him.

"There's the dog of the hour," said Bandit, filling a glass and handing it to Diesel.

"For putting us all back on the road," said Blake.

"And for being a stand-up bloke altogether," said Josh.

"Good to know ya, mate," said a yellow Labrador. "Congrats on the new venture."

Diesel sat down and rose his glass, gulping down the lump in his throat. "Thanks for making an army dog feel welcomed home."

"CHEERS!" Glasses clinked and mirth and merriment took him over as Diesel joined a conversation about an upcoming cricket game. The garage had always been a goal of his, but now he felt like he accomplished something far more difficult-making a place in a third troop, a group of guys he was proud to call his new friends.

Cartoons » Bluey Rated: K+, English, Humor & Family, Bluey, Bandit/Dad, Stripe, Pat, Words: 24k+, Favs: 1, Published: Sep 5, 2025 Updated: Sep 7, 2025

1

Chapter 5: Feedback

SUMMARY: One email leaves Bandit with some angry and upset while he's on holiday with his family. Later, one call from Marcus will help him let it go for good.

Every morning right when he awoke, Bandit Heeler was on his phone, looking through any new notifications. Whether it was a news article, a text from a friend, or an email from work, he made sure to not leave anyone hanging for longer than necessary. He liked clearing them out as his first accomplishment of a productive day.

This morning, as he sat up in bed in their rental, he pondered what he might receive. He probably shouldn't be doing this while on vacation, but a habit was a habit. The first thing to pop up across his lock screen was his email app.

His stomach did a somersault.

"Morning, babe," Chilli yawned, sitting up. "What's new today?"

"Marcus got back about the book," said Bandit in a small voice.

For the past few months, Bandit had taken his career in a new direction. Instead of planning and supervising digs in various corners of the world, he had taken on a new challenge: writing a book about the first dogs to walk upright. Since Marcus Beagle was his closest colleague and an experienced book editor, he became Bandit's biggest champion for making this dream of his a reality. Through the many writing blocks and organizing of all his findings into a cohesive narrative, Marcus was there offering encouragement and insights from the many books he helped see to shelves.

Finally sending off the book to Marcus was the catalyst for the Heelers going on this vacation in the first place, a much-needed respite while the fruits of his labor were inspected. This was his first book and the first big piece of writing he had shared since childhood. For once, Bandit couldn't bring himself to look at the email yet.
"Well, what does Marcus think?" Chilli asked, scooting closer and peering over his shoulder.

Bandit tapped the notification and braced for the email app to open. This was it. The culmination of all he worked for. He started to read.

Bandit,
I realize you're on holiday but I couldn't wait to send this off to you. I must say that I appreciate all the work that you've put into this project and I quite enjoyed reading your first draft.

"That's great, babe!" Chilli gave him a smoochy-kiss and hopped out of bed. "I'll get brekkie started for the kids, you tell me how the rest of it goes, okay?"

Bandit nodded at his wife as she shut the door. He heard his kids' excited cheers and chuckled. Now back to his business.

That being the case, it is only the first draft and we have a lot of work ahead of us still.

Bandit's stomach plummeted into his tail. The world outside fell away and as he read through the email numerous times, he began to feel the lapping waves of discouragement.

He wished he never saw that notification.

BANDIT: This episode of Bandit is called…*sigh* "Feedback."

"Where's dad?" asked Bluey as Chilli set her plate of eggs and sausage down in front of her at the kitchen bar.

Chilli looked back to their bedroom down the hall from the living room. "I think…he slept in. I'll go get him." She delivered Bingo her breakfast and went back to check on Bandit. He was usually out by now moaning about his hunger, so this was a bit odd.

Discover more

Cartoons

Cartoons fan fiction

Writing community forum

When she opened the door, she saw Bandit sitting on the bed staring ahead at the wall. His phone was locked and off to the side.

"Babe?" said Chilli. He didn't acknowledge her. "Bandit?"

He flinched. "Oh, uh, hey babe." His shoulders slumped and he turned back to the wall.

Chili sat down next to her husband and regarded him. The spark in his eyes he had a few minutes ago had vanished, replaced with an emptiness that had her worried "Is everything alright?" she said softly.

Bandit blinked and turned to Chilli, trying to put up his usual sunny demeanor for her. "Uh, yeah, it's all good. Is, uh, brekkie on?"

Chilli placed her hand on his. "Bandit, what's wrong? You looked like someone stomped on your pavlova."

Bandit sighed. He really couldn't sneak anything past his wife. She was too good, all that airport security training coming in handy. Slowly, his front broke down and he returned to staring at the wall. "He hated it."

"What?" Chilli stepped back. "That doesn't sound like Marcus."

Bandit laughed. "You're right, but he said it's not where it needs to be yet, and he called it a 'first draft.'" Chilli put her paw on his shoulder and his ears slumped, the last vestiges of his self giving way to his sadness. "He knows how hard I worked on this book already, how much he pushed the publisher to let me tell this story. It just feels like…heh, that I did make a beautiful pavlova and it's been stomped on."

"Oh, come here, big fella." She pulled him into a hug.

"I poured over every word, babe," Bandit lamented, "and I just feel like a fraud now. Like…I never should've started."

Chilli's next decision would be the key to getting her husband out of his funk. Like the bones he uncovered every day, she set to pull him out and clean him up.

She booped him on the snout before walking to his side of the bed. "Alright, Heeler, I know what you need," she declared, pulling him up to stand. "A good day at the beach with your kids."

"What?" Bandit sat back on the bed at Chilli's abrupt tone shift.

"You're on holiday and you deserve a clear mind away from your work. Did you read the whole email?"

Bandit scratched the back of his neck. "Well, no." Truthfully, Marcus's criticisms were only in the first paragraph. He threw his phone aside after reading just that.

Chilli helped him up again. "Okay, have some breakfast, leave all those cares behind, and maybe later on you can revisit that email with a better perspective. I know how hard you worked on that book and Marcus does too. Come on, Bluey and Bingo are waiting."

With that, Bandit was gently pushed to the door and quickly gathered as much composure as he could. He knew Chilli wasn't letting him dwell in his self-doubt but he wondered if it really would help him forget. Before he could sink back into the depths of his sadness, the door opened and Bluey and Bingo's tails wagged furiously. They cheered his arrival and Bandit's heart melted like it always did.

Breakfast did improve his mood. That gnawing in his stomach after he read the email did feel like hunger. It was funny how often he mistook one for the other. Afterward, everyone packed their bags and went down to the beach, which was also relaxing. Of course, Bluey and Bingo kept his mind and body active with tons of games. But when he wasn't chatting with Chilli or helping his kids turn him into a merdog on land, he felt himself drifting back to that nagging voice that said, you aren't good enough for this. Your words weren't worth it. He zoned out and drifted his gaze toward the horizon as his kids' laughter fizzled, blending with the washing surf into a kind of white noise.

A snap within the din brought him back to reality. "What? Huh?" He searched around, locking eyes with Chilli, her snapped fingers held aloft.

"Let it go, babe," she said, gesturing to the sprawling beach around them. "You're missing all this."

"I'm trying," said Bandit.

All the distractions seemed to only leave him afloat on his anxieties until one incident with a Stickbird would help both Bingo and him to process their grief over their creations and let go of the bad feelings. As he used all his might to chuck his angry and upset far away into the ocean, he felt like he could finally enjoy the day with his family and leave the book and its woes behind.

Later that day, after all the chaos died down and the kids were put to bed, Bandit sat back and let the silence come in without any of the negative talk that had plagued him earlier. Sadly, it didn't last long as his phone rang. Sitting up, he picked up the device and beheld Marcus's proper-looking headshot on screen. A wave of ill thoughts nearly made him drop his phone but he managed to answer the call anyway.

"What's up, babe?" Chilli asked.

"G'day, Marcus," Bandit said tentatively, finger twitching as he held the phone to his ear.

Chilli gulped. Oh, dear.

"Evening, Bandit!" Marcus greeted in his chipper English, *"Did you get my email earlier today? I know you're usually prompt with responses so to not hear from you all day was a bit unusual, I'll admit."*

"Yeah, uh, busy day with the kids is all. We were at the beach."

"Oh, that sounds delightful!"

"Yeah, it was…" Bandit trailed off, feeling his angry and upset filling him again. "Marcus, I-"

"Would it be alright if I turned this into a FaceyTalk? I want to talk to you about that email, not as your boss, but as your friend."

Bandit raised an eyebrow in surprise. But he gave the go-ahead and moved to the kitchen bar. He propped his phone up on the napkin holder and soon, Marcus appeared surrounded by the overflowing burgundy bookshelves in his home office.

He adjusted his big square glasses and waved. *"There you are, then!"*

"Hey there, Marcus," said Chilli, leaning into the frame. She patted his shoulder. "I'll let you two get on with it." As she walked to their bedroom, she had a feeling things were about to be worked out.

With Chilli gone, Bandit turned his focus to Marcus. "So how's Daisy and Honey?" he asked.

"Oh, wonderful," said Marcus. *"Honey's more curious and inquisitive than ever, and Daisy? Well, where would I be without her?"*

"So true." Despite the levity, Bandit felt his worry threatening to spill over him, more so upon seeing Marcus take a breath in and sigh.

"Well, I should get on with it, shouldn't I?" he said. *"I wanted to hop on here, face to face more or less, and…really express how proud I am of you."*

Bandit blinked. "I-I mean, you already did in the email-"

Marcus held a hand up. *"No, I really didn't. When you've been doing this as long as I have it's admittedly easy to…jump into that stuffy, professional voice and minimize how much of an accomplishment writing a book really is. It isn't an excuse but an acknowledgment. I minimized your accomplishment in that email and I apologize."*

Bandit put up a brave face and waved the air away. "All good, mate. I know it's business and all that. And I suppose it shouldn't have upset me like it did today, but…" He leaned back in his seat and scratched the stubble on his chin, once again searching for the perfect words, as he did countless times writing his book. It was all he could think to do. "I-I dunno. I guess I just thought back to school where I'd try to express myself by writing and the words were never right to me, never worth anything. This is really the biggest leap I've taken in putting something good out into the world, ya know?"

Marcus nodded. *"It isn't an easy feat by any stretch of the mind, and the fact that you've completed a manuscript is commendable. And I meant it when I said it was really good. Not many people can say they've written a first draft as close to a finished book as you have. It was compelling, well-researched, and made me feel as if I was out in the field by your side, and I've never done any iota of fieldwork!"*

"R-really?" Bandit asked, leaning in slightly toward his phone.

"I felt your passion for this history as I have for all your years at UQ, and it makes me proud to call you a colleague and a friend."

This was more than anyone had ever said about a piece of his writing before, and it threatened to overwhelm him. He cleared his throat to reposition the developing lump and said, "Thanks, mate. You…you don't know what that means to me. But then what was that 'still a lot of work to do' talk about?"

"Because your words are valuable to the world, Bandit, and I want to do everything in my power to ensure they have as much value as they can have, that you never doubt your voice in writing ever again. That's a promise. A wise dog once told me, 'Once you put something good out into the world, it's no longer yours really.'"

Bandit laughed, tears stinging the corners of his eyes. "That quote sounds familiar, almost like it's one of mine."

Marcus reciprocated the laughter. *"Yes, you've got me. So let's make this the best thing it can be, together, before you let the world have it, eh?"*

"You got it, Marcus," said Bandit.

"And I owe you a pint when you return from holiday."

Bandit laughed again, feeling all the extraneous negativity that weighed him down all day draining away til not a drop remained. "I'll hold you to that, mate."

"Of course. Good night. Tell the kids Honey says hi."

"Sure will. Thanks, again."

"My pleasure, Dr. Heeler."

Chilli looked up from her book and smiled as Bandit entered and climbed into bed next to her. "Sounded like good conversation in there," she said, bookmarking the page and setting it down on the table.

"Yeah, we worked it all out," said Bandit.

"Still regret writing the book?"

Bandit turned to her, and Chilli saw the life in her husband's eyes back and brighter than it had been for a while. "Nope," he declared, "Not one bit. In fact, I think I'm gonna really enjoy being an author."

Chapter 6: Concert

SUMMARY: Bandit meets an old friend in the park and gets the chance to reawaken the dormant rock dog in him.

After Bandit Heeler blinked most of the sleepies away, he emerged from the house into the pink of the early morning, guitar case in hand.

Bluey looked up from her and Bingo's clapping game on the porch and pointed at the case. "Are you bringing that to the park with you?"

"Yeah, why not?" said Bandit, walking down the steps.

Bluey's tail began to wag. "Ooh, are you going to play your songs in front of people?"

Bandit felt his tail twitch but he willed it still. "Nah, kid," he said with a chuckle. "I just wanna play to play. I haven't played for people in years."

"Why not?" Bingo asked.

Bandit shrugged. "I don't have the time."

"If it's because you don't think you're good," said Bluey, wringing her hands together, "I think you're the best guitar player in the whole world."

Bandit ruffled Bluey's ears. "Aw, thanks, kid. Real nice of you to say."

"Well, it's true. You could play in front of people and they'd love it."

Sometimes he wondered who was smiling down on him to give him a daughter so wonderful. Bluey and Bingo followed him down their stone path as they set off for morning walkies.

BANDIT: "This episode of Bandit is called "Concert."

When they reached the park, Bluey and Bingo saw Lucky swinging on the monkey bars and dashed away to meet him. Bandit took a seat on a nearby bench and unclipped the case locks. Opening the case and revealing his Burgundy Beauty put a smile on his snout every single time. He wondered how he went so long without it.

Since Bandit's old Burgundy Beauty was unearthed from the attic, its dulcet tones rooted themselves in the daily cacophony of the Heeler household. Sure, if you asked him to slot in a music hobby among his archaeology job, house chores, his social life with the neighborhood dads, not to mention the two pups he loved to the moon and back and their rambunctious games, he would call it an impossible task. Still, as it had been during college, it slinked back into his life as a way to reach inner peace after a long day of being Bandit Heeler. And frankly, as crazy as his life was now, he welcomed a chance to get lost in an art that had always made him happy.

As he fretted some dusty chords and strummed the instrument to life, his mind went back to Bluey's words. Bluey and Bingo loved to watch him play. They loved to hear him tell stories of playing in coffee shops and pubs during his college years. And they especially loved the silly songs he wrote.

That is, the ones he deemed appropriate.

He thought of an old friend named Joff, who's every passion lay in music. Bandit never had the drive that funky dog had, but he was alright with that. Leave the fame and fortune to those who wanted to scratch and claw their way there. He was content watching his kid play and getting lost in a melody.

"Oi, Bandit!"

Bandit looked up. A shaggy Brussels Griffon was jogging toward him, his glasses bouncing slightly as he waved. The same busker that he did the worm in front of the other day on the square.

Speak of an old friend and you'll often find he shows up.

"Joff!" Bandit set the guitar down and grabbed his paw to shake, then pulled him into a hug. "How's it hangin', ya big lug?"

"Oh, she's apples, ya know?" said Joff. "So great to finally chat."

"Yeah, I know you're a busy bee, eh, Busker?"

Bandit nudged him with an elbow and Joff laughed. "Man, you still remember that old nickname?"

"I coined it! So what's the big gig today?"

"Well, you saw me at the markets the other day, right? 'Nother one of those." He looked back across the park where a stage was overlooking the market tents. "Got a mate who's gonna do all duets with me."

"Oh, good one! When's it happening?"

"In an hour or two, as it happens," said Joff, checking his watch. "He should be here any minute to do sound check with me."

"I'll bring Bluey and Bingo. I'm sure they'll bring their dancing shoes."

"That's just what I love to hear!" Joff exclaimed. "Hey, you know that song you wrote, 'Girls Like That'?"

Bandit chuckled, remembering a song he wrote after the most popular girl on campus rejected his request for a date in no uncertain terms. "Yeah, those were the days, mate."

"It would be so cool if you could do that song with me sometime, ya know, if ya still play."

Bandit shook his head but with a smile. "Appreciate it, but those days are long gone."

"It can be a one-time thing, just for fun." Joff dug out his phone. "Here, at least gimme your digits so we can chat about it later?"

Bandit sighed, but exchanged his phone number with his old friend.

"Thanks, mate. Look, I've gotta run but I'll be in touch, okay?"

"No worries, mate," said Bandit, waving as he left. "Good talking with you again."

"Likewise!" he called back.

"You know thongaphone dog?" asked Bluey suddenly.

Bandit jumped and there she and Bingo were, tails a flurry and stars practically shooting from their excited eyes.

"Yeah," Bandit confirmed, "he's an old friend from college. He's playing over there in a while."

"Are you gonna play your guitar with him?" asked Bingo, clinging to his leg.

"Nah, kid," Bandit laughed, shaking Bingo off.

She crossed her arms. "But I don't understand."

"Yeah," said Bluey, "you're good at guitar and singing, and playing with friends is always fun."

"Sound logic," said Bandit, ruffling his kids' heads, "but it's never as simple as that when you're my age."

He decided to not burden them with complicated explanations and instead, let them go back to playing. In turn, he picked up his guitar again and let it take him back with a melody.

It was bouncy and funky, with a heavy layer of sarcasm overtop. He still remembered all the chords for that silly little song, as well as the words.

"Girls like that
Girls like that don't go for guys like us…"

Bluey was sweet, but Bandit knew he wasn't fit for playing live anymore. His voice wobbled slightly as he sang. He fudged a note here and there. Making a fool of himself in front of his kids was one thing. Making a fool in front of a crowd of strangers was entirely another. Those days with his brothers were well behind him and he didn't want to dig up that old carefree life. Just doing it for the sake of doing it was good enough for him, even back when he was playing for coffee houses and parties in college.

"I wanna see the facts
And she says, simply, 'No.
Uh-uh.'"

He couldn't deny that he missed it in a way, his tapping feet was a big indicator. He wouldn't deny it was the best part of being a musician, but he always knew he wouldn't "make it" as it were.

"Hey, Burgundy Beauty!"

Bandit hit a sour chord and lifted his head.

Pat Labrador sat down next to him and they shook hands. "Ain't seen you with that in forever, mate!"

Bandit chuckled. "Since uni, really. I picked it back up recently after they," gesturing to Bluey and Bingo, "earthed it up in the attic."

Pat leaned back. "Isn't that something?"

Bandit's phone buzzed all of a sudden. Taking it out, he saw Joff's phone number appear on-screen. "I only just gave him my digits and he's texting," he said out loud. "Interesting."

"Who?" asked Pat.

"Old college friend. He's playing at the markets today." Bandit opened the text.

"I hate to do this to you, but I need your help now. Come to the stage and someone will let you through."

Bandit raised an eyebrow. This didn't sound good. He had only just reacquainted himself with the guy but he naturally felt drawn to help. Besides, it couldn't have been anything big, right?

"You mean Busker?" Pat asked. "Thought I saw him the other day with that thongophone…"

"Mate, I gotta see to something," said Bandit, standing up. "Bluey, Bingo, c'mon!"

"Oh, n-no worries, mate."

Bandit nodded his thanks before his phone dinged again. Looking at his phone again, there was one more text.

"Bring your guitar."

"What's going on, dad?" asked Bluey.

Bandit packed up his guitar and sighed. "We're going to see a friend of mine."

As they neared the stage, a security guard waved him over. "You Bandit?"

Bandit nodded. "Yeah."

"Who're them?"

"My kids," he said, matter-of-fact-ly.

The guard nodded. "Follow me." He led them backstage where Joff paced next to a table covered with snacks.

Joff noticed his arrival and ran over. "Oh, thank goodness."

"What's going on?" Bandit asked as the security guard departed. Joff's hair was disheveled. "You don't still pull your hair out?"

Joff let out a breath. "Not…often." He shook his head. "Look, I won't beat around the bush, mate. I need a duet partner."

Bluey and Bingo gasped. "You do?" they squealed in excitement.

"What?" said Bandit. "What about your mate?"

Joff scratched his head. "He told me he can't make it. He lost his voice overnight. Something about allergies."

Bandit blinked. "Wow. Crazy."

Joff spoke fast. "I don't have time to look around town for a replacement so I would really appreciate you doin' it."

Bandit took a step back. "Nah, mate, I'm no good anymore."

"Please, mate?" Joff pleaded. "You're gonna make a lotta people happy. That's what it's all about, right?"

Bandit felt a tug at his arm. "Yeah, dad," said Bluey, "We like hearing you sing. Shouldn't that be enough for others too?"

"It's just that simple," Bingo chimed in. A-a-and here came the please face.

It couldn't have been that simple, could it?

Joff handed him a setlist and Bandit skimmed through it. He saw songs he could play and sing in a heartbeat. One in particular stuck out to him and he gave Joff a knowing look. "I think I know which one you wanna rehearse first."

Joff looked at the ground, flashing a nervous smile. "I'm cheeky, yeah, but let's just try this one song, then you can tell me if you wanna do the set, okay?"

Bandit would let Joff have the song he wanted to play, and his feelings wouldn't change, right? That's how this would go, and he'd return to the park with Bluey and Bingo.
The two dogs took seats opposite each other and Bandit set his Burgundy Beauty on his lap. Joff's guitar was black, adorned with a decorative rose. Bandit couldn't help some excitement bubble up inside him, despite his reservations.

"Okay, mate," he said, "you know the leads?"

"Like the back of my paw," said Joff.

"We'll see. 1, 2, 3, 4."

Hearing that silly song with the second guitar part after so many years made everything click in place.

"I'll take the first verse, you go second," said Joff as they neared it. Bandit nodded, grateful to have a much better singer set the standard for the performance.

"Girls like that
Girls like that don't go for guys like us
I wanna see the facts
And she says, simply 'no'
'Uh-uh'"

He sounded like he had been doing this for years, so when Bandit joined in on the chorus harmony, he didn't expect much. But he was surprised again to hear their voices blend together perfectly.

"I'll keep on looking for that lovin' feeling
I'll keep on looking for that lovin' feeling
All of the chemists and witch doctors, they know
What I'll never ever know"

Bluey and Bingo were shaking their tails to the music and Bandit couldn't help but grin ear to ear. His warbling voice didn't matter nor did his slightly rusty rhythm playing. What he missed most of all about music and playing live was what Joff said it was all about. He missed making others happy with a song. And with a look toward Joff and a nod, it was all that simple.

"They know, they know, they know that lovin' feeling
They know, the chemists and witch doctors know it,
They know, they know, they know that lovin' feeling"

"This song's my favorite!" said Bluey, bouncing up and down in the front of the market crowd.

Chilli laughed, tapping her foot. "You kids sure are something. How'd you convince him to get up there?"

"It wasn't us," Bingo pointed out, "It was Joff!"

Chilli saw Joff swaying to the rhythm, and Bandit wearing the goofiest grin as he strummed. He looked so happy up there, and that made her happy as well. Few things in life were as simple as that, but she'd allow this matter to be.

The song ended and the crowd cheered. Joff gave Bandit a high paw and stepped back to the mic. "How about a round for my good friend Bandit Heeler?"

Everyone clapped and hollered, and Bandit bowed and waved. Finding his family, he winked at them, then howled, "Who likes to da-a-a-ance? 1, 2, 3, 4!"

Cartoons » Bluey Rated: K+, English, Humor & Family, Bluey, Bandit/Dad, Stripe, Pat, Words: 24k+, Favs: 1, Published: Sep 5, 2025 Updated: Sep 7, 2025

1

Chapter 7: Double Babysitter

SUMMARY: Before the wedding of the season, before the car chase around Brisbane, even before the first Heeler Christmas, there was a Cocker Spaniel fresh from a break-up, a Heeler missing something in his life, and a game called Double Babysitter.

A vibrating sound turned Chilli Heeler away from her book and to her night stand. She grabbed her phone and tapped the new notification. Her ears drooped upon reading the distraught text from her friend Frisky. "Oh no..."

Her husband Bandit exited the bathroom, wiping his snout and slinging the hand towel over his shoulder. "So where do you wanna go for date night, babe?"

Chill shook her head and motioned her big blue toward the bed. "Bandit, Frisky broke up with Bosco."

"What?" Bandit laid down next to her and skimmed through the ongoing conversation Frisky was sending pictures of. "I thought he was the one. He seemed like a stand-up guy."

"Frisky thought so too. Apparently he was chatting up another girl at a barbecue last week who then told Frisky about it."

"Ooh, bummer," Bandit winced before shrugging. "Well, good riddance, I say. She'll do fine without him." He kissed Chilli and settled into his pillow.

Chilli set her phone where it was and nestled closer to her husband. "Eventually," she said, wrapping an arm around Bandit. "I wanna help her, though."

"Maybe babysitting the kids will cheer her up?" Bandit suggested.

"Didn't your brother say he wanted to babysit this time?" asked Chilli..

"Oh, right, forgot. The kids love their uncle Rad."

"Yeah, they do," Chilli concurred. "He's kind, strong, if a bit scatterbrained."

"A *lot* scatterbrained," Bandit corrected, and the pair laughed. "Don't forget his propensity for jumping into pools."

"But you're all like that," said Chilli, nudging Bandit with her elbow.

"Ha! I suppose. Yup, he's a catch. Small wonder he hasn't been snapped up yet."

The pair let the warm night air and fluttering fruit bats outside start to lull them to sleep. Bandit rolled over to face Chilli and met wide eyes with a hint of mischief.

"Uh, babe?" he said, sitting up. "You're making the 'I have a plan' eyes again."

Chilli hesitated, but couldn't help herself. "Okay, it's crazy," she said in a low voice, "But I may have a plan, and it's called-"

CHILLI: "This episode of Bandit is called 'Double Babysitter.'"

"Five min away," read the latest text from Radley. Bandit locked his phone and grabbed the expensive cologne from the bathroom cabinet. "Are you sure this'll work, babe?" he asked, spraying it on his neck fur.

"You never really know," said Chilli, brushing her hair, "but my intuition's never steered me wrong before."

"I feel like I'm playing puppets with dolls I shouldn't be playing with."

"It'll be fine, big fella." Chilli placed her hands on his shoulders. "She was telling me last night she'd never try again. I want her to bounce back strong, okay?"

Bandit sighed. "Fair enough."

"Plus there's Lamingtons in it for you at the restaurant," Chilli cooed, booping Bandit's nose.

Bandit sniffed. "Well, you could've started with that!"

"Started with what?" asked Bluey.

The pair of Heelers looked down and there were their kids, as if by magic. They had a knack for it.

"Why does Dad smell funny?" asked Bingo.

"I knew it still worked." said Bandit, making lovey-dovey eyes as Chilli rolled hers. Bandit knelt down to their level. "Me and your mum are going on a date, remember?"

"And your uncle Rad is on his way to babysit," said Chilli.

Bluey slumped. "Oh yeah."

"Don't worry, kiddo," Bandit encouraged. "You'll have lots of fun."

"I love uncle Rad!" said Bingo, her tail wagging. "He's kind and funny."

A screeching sounded outside startling everyone. A hollow plastic thump followed. They ran to the balcony, searching for the disturbance.

Discover more

Anime fan fiction

Crossover fiction

Books fan fiction

"Don't worry, Chilli!" called Wendy Chow-Chow, who was lounging in her front yard. "Bandit, your brother's here! And I'd see to your wheelie bins before the bin chickens do."

"If a little reckless..." Chilli sighed.

Bandit felt a buzz on his hip and took out his phone. "Yeah, he's here."

Chilli waved. "Thanks, Wendy!"

Radley Heeler twirled his keys in his hand and strolled up to the porch. He opened the door and peered inside. Not a soul was there to greet him, which gave him a funny idea. He snuck inside, carefully shutting the door behind him and tiptoed to the red armchair, pulling it out just enough so he could hide behind it.

Just as he settled in, his niece bounded down the stairs, cheering, "Uncle Rad's here!" She threw the door open and met with an empty porch. "Hi, uncle Ra...where is he?"

Radley pounced on the little orange Heeler and hoisted her up into his arms as she squealed and giggled. "How ya doin', Bluey?" he greeted.

"I'm Bingo!" said the pup.

Did he misremember? He was certain the blue one was Bingo and the orange one was Bluey. Radley held out the pup by her leg. "Really?"

"Yeah, that's Bluey!" she laughed, pointing toward the inside. Sure enough, there was Bandit, Chilli and Bluey walking into view.

"Ah, yeah, 'cause he's blue," Radley nodded.

Bluey stomped her foot. "I'm a girl!"

"Oh, yeah, I knew that." Well, he did it again. Best to just go with it.

"Are you putting us to bed tonight, uncle Rad?" Bingo asked.

Radley gave a thumbs-up. "You bet."

"Hooray!"

Bluey looked away. "Not hooray."

Chilli smiled tenderly as Radley put Bingo upright on the floor. "Bluey isn't sure about babysitter putdowns, uncle Rad."

"Don't worry, Bluey," said Radley, kneeling down. "Who better to do a babysitter putdown than your uncle Rad?"

"Hello!" came a different voice.

"Frisky!" cheered the kids, as they ran and tackled an English Cocker Spaniel with a bag slung over her shoulder.

"Frisky, this is uncle Rad," Bingo introduced.

Radley was flabbergasted. She was beautiful, and her coat gleamed in the rising moonlight outside. "Hi," he said.

Frisky smiled. "Hi."

"Frisky, have you met Bandit's brother Radley before?" Chilli asked, snapping Radley out of his trance.

"Uh, yeah," she said hesitantly. "Didn't you fall in the pool at the wedding?"

Radley shrugged. "Probably."

"Frisky is Bluey's fairy godmother," said Bingo.

"Sorry, Frisky," said Chilli, "Uncle Rad got in touch last minute and said he'd babysit. You must've got my message."

"Oh." Frisky dug her phone from her bag and scrolled through her messages. "No, I didn't get it." She put it back and stepped toward the door. "That's fine. Um…I'll just go."

Discover more

Fan fiction story

Movies

Cookies

Bluey and Bingo took hold of both her arms, stopping her in her tracks. "No! Don't go!" Bingo howled. "Both babysit!"

"Oh, well a-as long as it's okay with uncle Rad," said Frisky.

Radley heard himself say, "Fine by me."

"Hooray!"

The Heelers saw everyone wave at them from the front yard, and they waved back as they peeled out of their driveway and toward downtown Brisbane.

As they reached the bottom of the hill they called home, Chilli said, "You gotta talk to Rad about his parking."

"Yeah, I do," he agreed. "Can we talk about your performance back there for starters?"

"I told you it would go well."

"Sure did. I couldn't believe how well that went." The buildings grew taller and taller, and the lights brighter and more colorful as they passed behind them. Bandit swallowed a knot in his stomach. "This still all feels funny to me. You didn't tell Frisky Rad was coming over, did you?"

"Yeah, I didn't," said Chilli. "Luckily, the hard part's over. My work is done."

"Yeah, maybe I'm worrying for nothin'. All you did was bring them together. Whether or not Rad or Frisky takes a chance is up to them."

"I hope Frisky takes that chance. She can't another breakup get in her way."

Driving into a parking garage a block from their restaurant, Bandit looked around for a spot. "Honestly, I'm more worried for Rad," he said, pulling into a spot nearby.

"Sometimes the only hint he can take is the answer itself, if you get me."

"Why don't you have a wife?" Bluey asked.

"Whoa!" This was the last first question Radley expected for their game of 20 Questions. "W-well, how do you know I don't?"

"Do you have a wife?"

Radley looked down. "Well…no."

"So why don't you have a wife?"

It took everything in Radley to not tell Bluey the same thing he always told her Nana when she asked about his love life- 'I'm married to my job.' "Uhhhhh, her turn!" he said, pointing to Frisky.

"How many friends have you got?" asked Bingo.

"Um…three?" Frisky answered. There was Chilli, her flatmate Cookie, Rollo Dachshund…

"That's not many," said Bingo.

"Why have you only got three friends?" asked Bluey.

When they put it like that, Frisky lost all her words. "Well, um…back to him!"

The kids turned back to Radley. "Why do we only see you at Christmas?" Bluey asked.

"'Cause I work on an oil rig."

"Is that why you don't have a wife?"

"Oh! …maybe." Gone every two weeks with meathead technicians and engineers who worked hard to ensure all systems were go, who went into crisis mode at the drop of a meter, and whose last thoughts were looking for romance amid the oil, heat, and back-breaking work? More like "definitely."

Bandit pat his belly as the Heelers exited the restaurant. "I ate so much, I feel like I've got a food baby in there."

"You're hilarious," Chilli scoffed. "It was good, though, wasn't it?"

"Sure was." The nightlife in Brisbane drew the throngs of people in many directions, and one in particular caught Bandit's eye. "How about some jazz?"

"One second," said Chilli, stopping and retrieving her phone. "I'll just call Frisky about the kids."

The speeddial rang in her ear, and Frisky answered after a few seconds. *"Hi, Chilli-dog,"* she said in a quiet voice.

"How ya going, Frisk?"

"All good, kids are in bed. I'm just looking out on their balcony. It's a beautiful night."

Time for the big question. "How's Rad?"

"Well, he's...something. The kids love him." Frisky fell silent after that.

"That's it?" Chilli asked.

"Don't worry about me," Frisky reassured. "I know I can't let this get me down on love, and I really appreciate you having me to watch your kids. But...I dunno. I'll see you later."

Frisky hung up and slid her phone off to the side, returning her gaze to the shining stars above. As they twinkled, she imagined each one having a match for itself while she felt like the one with bits taken off from being separated so violently time and time again. Sooner or later she'd have no good bits left to latch onto, would she?

She heard creaking in the floor and blinked. She hadn't even noticed how moist her eyes were. Radley was suddenly there, easing himself down next to her, his luscious orange mop top only slightly disturbed by the warm, gentle breeze. They stared at the night sky for what seemed like ages, content at first by only each other's presence.

"So almond milk shampoo, eh?" said Frisky.

"'Scuse me?" said Radley.

"Come on! Even without the '20 Questions,' a bloke like you couldn't get his hair that plump without it."

Radley chuckled as Frisky ruffled his fur. "I reckon not. My stylist Penny turned me onto a brand called Orchard Tree, and it's been a game-changer. It's the only shampoo I like."

"The shampoo is great, but the conditioner? I don't rate the conditioner."

"Yeah, me neither. But you know, you can't go around with open follicles."

"Not a chance." Frisky thought she heard covers ruffling behind her but when the rustling stopped, peace set in once more and she put it out of mind. "We have more alike than I first thought."

"Yeah, the world's kinda funny for putting two hopeless romantics down on their luck who use the same shampoo in the same place at the same time."

The two laughed as quietly as they could and laid down on the deck. A kookaburra's distinct call could be heard off in the distance. Whether it was a strange coincidence, or in some way the world was looking after Radley, he knew he couldn't end this night without getting closer to Frisky. And that meant addressing something else nagging on his mind since the games they played earlier.

"I'm sorry, by the way." he said gently.

"About what?" Frisky asked.

"You and this Bosco bloke."

Frisky sat up and pulled her knees in close. "H-how do you know about that?"

Radley returned upright and faced Frisky. "I'll admit I'm aloof but I'm not dense. That story we told the girls earlier wasn't entirely made up, was it?"

Frisky sighed. "No. It wasn't," she said almost in a whisper, body slumping. "I don't understand. Every time I think I've found the one, he winds up pulling a stunt like that, or I'm just left hanging like old washing." She tried to keep her composure but felt her voice breaking with every word as the pain of Bosco's cheating manifested itself again. "I…don't know how many more times I can 'give it another go' before I run out of 'gos' to 'give,' you know?"

Radley scooted closer and put an arm around her shoulder. "I hear ya. I wish I could say I've been down as much as you, but…I haven't."

Frisky raised an eyebrow as him. "What? A model dog like you?"

"Yeah, can you believe it?" Radley joked, flexing his free bicep, before returning his gaze to the stars. "I dunno. I suppose it feels like I'm a puzzle, and I've got a piece missing in me, and I've been trying different things to fill the hole, but nothing's felt like the right fit. But goodness knows I can't think about that keepin' an oil rig running."

Frisky could sense the loneliness in his voice. "I guess not," she said. A shooting star whizzed across the expanse before fluttering into darkness. It traveled along no matter where it was in the sky or how far it had left to go.

Frisky willed that star to go as far as it needed to reach its destiny, and prayed for some of the same courage to be passed onto her.

"But," said Radley, drawing her attention back to him, "if you've got one more 'go' to 'give,' in ya, I'm sure someday I can find my missing piece." He locked eyes with her, forever reflected in his irises. "May even be closer than I think."

She smiled back and patted him on his shoulder, feeling hard muscles under his pillowy fur. "We'll see, Heeler. We'll see."

"We'll see" turned into a phone number exchange before Bandit and Chilli returned home, which turned into a few dates, which turned into a Christmas trip to Bali, which turned into a wedding in the Heelers' backyard. For Frisky, this was the 'go' that went the distance and Radley finally found his missing piece. Even if she almost let him go due to him wanting her to move west with him, he affirmed that nothing would be more important than his family, the ones he already had and the one he was gaining.

After dinner, Chilli and Frisky were on the front porch laughing about memories when Frisky said, "You know what's funny? I made a bet with Trix years ago about me getting hitched with a guy you introduced to me."

"Oh, really?" Chilli asked hesitantly. "Well, you know Trix. She's got bets with everyone."

"Yeah," she said, crossing her arms, "and she's collecting tonight."

Chilli startled, nearly spilling her drink. "Wha- You think I-?

"I've know you how long, Chilli?" said Frisky, "'Double Babysitter,' indeed."

"I did not!" Chilli denied as Frisky rolled her eyes.

Bluey bounded in and plopped herself between them. "Frisky, you're having a happy ending!"

"Well, we'll see, won't we, Bluey?" Frisky responded. But in her heart, she was sure. This princess had finally found her prince. Her true love.

SUMMARY: After a disastrous attempt at his wife's roast night, Diesel Kelpie calls on his friends to help turn dinner from impossible to delicious.

Diesel threw the oven door open and was assaulted by thick, black smoke pouring out. It surged down his throat, not helped by his gasp of surprise at the orange glow of fire he beheld. He fell back into the kitchen island, bumping his knee on the corner and crashing into a heap.

"Retreat, troops, retreat!" he choked out in between hacking coughs, waving the smoke away. The smoke alarm overhead screamed its shrill alert, adding to the ongoing bombardment on Diesel's senses. Blinded by searing tears, he crawled to the cabinet under the sink and grabbed the fire extinguisher. After standing and readying his weapon, he unloaded it up and down and across the oven. Once the last of the stray flames flickered out and the black smoke mixed with the extinguisher foam into a light gray matter, he limped to the window and threw it wide, ushering the smoke in that direction.

Diesel heaved fresh air in and out and willed his racing heat down while holding his throbbing knee. Crisis averted, and now that his nose wasn't overwhelmed with smoke, it was time to sniff out the problem. The oven control panel shone through the dissipating clouds and Diesel squinted toward it looking for an answer. Did he not hear the timer go off? Did he set the wrong temperature? What was it that caused such a calamity?

The timer was still ticking down from the three hours he set it to. In fact, it still had two and a half hours to go. Scratch that off. The temperature readout said 250, just as he set it. The "C" right beside it was a new sight however.

"'C'?!," he balked in his mind, *"Celsius?!"*

Slowly turning his eyes down, what he saw on the sheet pan was not the red, pepper-coated roast beef he started out with, but a mass resembling a smoking volcanic rock freshly cooled from an eruption.

Diesel's stomach dropped and he ran a paw through his long hair. "Ohhhhh, biscuits."

DIESEL: This episode of Bandit is called "Curry Impossible."

Earlier that day…

In the living room of the Kelpie home, father Diesel and middle child Rusty were trading pushups, something the kid always liked to do with his dad. Diesel rose to the apex, disregarding the mild burn in his biceps. "15!" he grunted.

"15!" Rusty parroted, coming to the top just the same.

"Good one, mate! Good form. Think you can go to 20?"

"Kids! Come on, let's go!" called his wife Pepper. She was standing by the hall leading to the bedrooms. "The sooner we get your school shopping done, the sooner I can grab groceries for dinner!"

"Guess we'll find out later." Rusty nodded as Diesel lifted himself onto his feet. "I can handle the shopping if ya want, babe."

Pepper smiled. "Oh, you'd do me a big favor. I'll send you the list."

The text popped up in a second and Diesel's mouth watered at every ingredient. Beef, potatoes, carrots. "Mmm, I love roast night."

"Me too," said Rusty, his tail wagging.

"Me three!" chirped Dusty, the youngest Kelpie, running into the living room.

"Ditto," said Digger, the eldest, walking in after.

Suddenly, Diesel was struck with a great idea, something he knew his kids would be excited for. "Know what?" he declared, "Why don't I cook dinner tonight?"

"No thanks!" chimed the kids, backing away.

"Kids, don't be rude," Pepper hissed, then turned to her husband hiding her own apprehension. "Um, are you sure, honey?"

Diesel held his hands up. "Look, I know my history, but I've learned a lot since the 'Garlic Incident.' I oughta start pullin' my weight around here now that I'm back for good."

"I appreciate it, but I can handle it," said Pepper, taking Diesel's hand.

Diesel added his other hand. "But you don't gotta. School shopping's gonna be a handful as it is." Diesel let go and knelt down to his kids. "You can give yer ol' dad another chance, eh?"

The kids made their "thinking very hard" faces until Digger spoke first. "Well, roast night doesn't seem that hard. Dad can probably do it."

"The worst that'll happen is we get fish and chips for dinner like last time," said Rusty.

Pepper shook her head. She knew she wasn't winning at this point. "Okay," she relented, "Dad's cooking dinner."

Diesel pumped his fists. "Uss!" Dusty giggled at his victory dance.

"C'mon, then," said Pepper, ushering the kids out the door before looking back. "I trust you, honey."

"You can count on me now, babe," Diesel shouted after. "I've got this!"

The door shut and Diesel looked back at the list. The weight of his current task was now upon him and it was heavy without warning. But he'd done much harder things in the army. It was just groceries and cooking dinner.

"I've got this," he said again, grabbing his keys and marching out the door.

Those words played in his head like a broken record as Diesel leaned against the counter and beheld his great cock-up. The kids were bound to be disappointed, but he could easily get back in their good graces. It was Pepper he was worried about. No one was safe from "the mom roast" as it was called, and she was bound to read him the riot act, not just for nearly burning down their kitchen, but for taking on something she could've already done herself, and correctly. She had sacrificed just as much as he had with his army service, and all he wanted was to give back.

A speck of brain power cleared and he recalled a mantra he drilled into his troop from day one, "Recognize when you need to ask for help, and then ASK!" He emphasized this because realizing you need help does no one any good if you don't put your wounded pride aside and reach out.

Time to take his own advice to heart.

He left the carnage behind, grabbed his phone from the coffee table and found the group chat titled "Space Dads," named after the game their sons liked playing all the time.
"SOS," he texted, *"Please come over right now."* He snapped a picture of the crime scene and sent it off, sweat beading on his back as his two best friends received the messages. Diesel paced the living room, waiting for a response but none came.

Five minutes later, the doorbell rang, setting his tail fur on end. Diesel opened it and beheld a clean cut jack russel terrier and a bushy zebra-colored border collie holding their phones up, Diesel's handiwork on full display.

"Mate," they pointedly said in unison.

Diesel felt a blush betray his tan muzzle. "That's a fine howdy-do," he mumbled as he herded them inside. The group headed straight for the kitchen and beheld the now wisping roast corpse with their own eyes.

"Oh my," said Blake Russel with a wince.

Josh Border Collie nodded, eyes wide. "The photo definitely sugarcoated it."

"I'm in a right pickle," said Diesel. "Me wife and kids'll be home from the shops later lookin' for…" He couldn't even picture what the roast was supposed to look like, and just gestured with both arms to his homebrew charcoal. "…not that!"

"How'd you even turn it into…" Blake echoed Diesel's action. "…that?"

"I set the oven low and slow for the chuck!" Diesel implored. "Recipe said 250 degrees!"

"You're dreamin', mate!" Josh laughed. "You grilled that meat!"

"I realize that now," said Diesel. "That's the last time I rely on an American recipe."

Blake poked the roast and drew his arm back when a chunk broke off and crumbled into powdered carbon. He stared for a moment before nodding. "Ah…Righto. Fizzy?"

"I need it, mate," Diesel sighed. Blake walked to the fridge and tossed a can toward Diesel who cracked it open while not breaking the thousand-yard stare setting in. He downed the entire thing down to the last drop and rubbed his temples.

"Mate, you good?" asked Josh. "It's just roast."

"It's not just roast, mate!" Diesel leaned against the counter, arms drooping. "I asked to work the mess hall so many times, mate. I always told 'em, 'first thing I'm gonna do when I'm done is cook for my family. I wanna give back like they've given to me. They're gonna love it.' And I blew it on a silly mistake." With one groan, he found himself fully at a loss. "What am I gonna do?"

Josh pulled Diesel upright again by his shoulders. "You're gonna put dinner on the table, Kelpie. That's what you're gonna do." Josh met Diesel's despair with a stern determination, a change from the border collie's usual happy-go-lucky attitude.

"How?" The kelpie wondered, "I-I used most of the meat I bought for my… cremation already."

"This meat?" said Blake, holding a zip-top bag from the fridge.

"Uh, yeah, that's the leftovers, I bought too much meat. And I ain't grabbing no fish and chips or takeaway curry to pass off, not for what's left of my dignity."

Josh opened it and beheld the contents, a gleam forming in his eye. He went to a nearby cabinet and started picking through spices.

Diesel followed. "What are ya doing, mate?"

Josh grabbed one more container, nodded, and shut the cabinet. "Don't need a takeaway curry if you can make one."

"What? Now *you're* dreamin'!" said Diesel. "I don't got all ya need for curry."

"Trust me," Josh countered. "You got enough."

As Josh went to the fridge and sifted through the produce, Diesel watched his friend taking on the challenge ahead, not unlike what he did many a time under deployment. The fire returned to him and he knew he had to take charge or he'd stand around like a green private and not learn anything from this. And he had to learn.

"Hang on!" barked Diesel. Josh and Blake whipped their heads toward him, surprised. Diesel cleared his throat. "Lookit, I want your help, need it, really. But if I'm gonna ever redeem this in my mind, I gotta be the one to cook it."

The two nodded their approval. "Of course, mate," said Josh. "Sorry if I got a bit ahead of myself."

"No worries. Thanks for talking me outta the hole. Now let's do this, eh?"

They high-fived. "Yeah!"

Sergeant mode engaged. "Josh, feed me instructions step by step. Blake, can you fetch ingredients?"

"Sir, yes, sir!" Blake saluted.

"I was just lookin' for onion and carrot, mate," said Josh, and Blake took up the task.

"How's your knife skills?" asked Josh.

Diesel answered by taking up the vegetables Blake offered up and cutting them in half and beginning to dice.

Josh chuckled in amazement. "Sweet as. That mess hall work served you well."

Diesel beamed without stopping his action. "Thanks, mate."

"Watch your fingers!" Josh yelped.

Diesel startled and looked back down before shifting his fingers. He flashed a nervous grin. "Right on."

"Take a breath, and just trust the process," Josh said.

Diesel continued on the path, pushing all doubts to the back of his mind. There was a chance that this couldn't work, that he didn't have what was needed to pull this misadventure back from the brink. But he couldn't focus on that. He needed to trust his friends and trust the process.

Before long, the meat chunks were cubed up and all ingredients prepped. The dogs congregated around a hot pot, empty and waiting. Diesel turned to Josh and the border collie nodded. First, the diced onions were scraped in from the cutting board and sautéed in oil and butter. Upon translucency, the carrots were added and took their turn on the scorching surface. Diesel listened to Josh's every instruction as he guided him through a simple beef curry recipe, sure to please at a moment's notice.

As Diesel poured in the beef stock and it began to boil, he took a moment to sniff the mixture he created. The smell his nose met almost blew him backwards. It was fantastic. Every piece of the puzzle had settled into place and for the first time since that morning, the weight of expectation had lifted from Diesel's shoulders.

"Good, eh?" said Josh.

Diesel looked at him, grinning ear to ear. "Mate, this is ace! How could I ever thank you for saving my tail?"

Josh smiled. "Just promise to check your temp's in the right format before you start cooking next time, okay?"

"Agreed," Blake concurred.

"Make that a double," said Diesel. "Now what's next?"

"Rice time," said Josh, rubbing his paws together.

"Right, I got a pot we can use. I'll need to know the ratios and maybe some cardamom as well-"

Josh held his paws up with a chuckle. "Mate, just throw it in a rice cooker."

Diesel stopped. "Heh-heh, got one o' those as well."

The Space Dads were long gone and the Kelpies were seated around the dinner table, the steaming result of Diesel's efforts placed at the center upon the lazy susan. Diesel's tail twitched with anticipation as Pepper placed the first spoonful of curry into her mouth. The payoff moment was here.

Her gaze turned from skeptical to surprised to delight with every chew. An "mmm" from little Dusty broke the silence. The entire table devolved into yummy eating noises and Diesel's tail devolved into full wagging as his heart surged with pride.

"Honey, this is amazing!" said Pepper.

"Ditto, dad," said Digger.

After dinner, the two parents were on the couch cuddling while the kids did the dishes. Pepper stroked Diesel's hair and he hummed happily.

"Thank you, Diesel Kelpie," she said. "You don't know how much you've helped me today."

"I have an idea," he responded. "All in a day's work. I just needed a good recipe."

"From Josh, I imagine."

"No one makes it better."

She sighed. "I never did get an answer as to why curry instead of roast night. Not that the kids minded."

"Call it a whim, a moment of inspiration." That answer sounded really good to Diesel, and to Pepper as well as she returned to scratching him behind his ears, his favorite spot.

"Dad!" Rusty called.

"Yeah, mate?" said Diesel.

"What's this black rock in the oven?"

Diesel's brow immediately produced a cold sweat.

"And why's all this white stuff in there?"

Pepper sat up and crossed her arms. "Yeah, why is all that there, dad?"

Diesel gulped. "I knew I forgot something."

Bandit by UncaAJ

Cartoons » Bluey Rated: K+, English, Humor & Family, Bluey, Bandit/Dad, Stripe, Pat, Words: 24k+, Favs: 1, Published: Sep 5, 2025 Updated: Sep 7, 2025

1

Chapter 9: A Granddad's Day Out

SUMMARY: Ahead of Radley and Frisky's wedding, Mort, Maynard and Bob take a chill day with their new family in law, Gene "Wake" Spaniel, and learn there's more that he offers than his laid-back persona had them believe.

Bingo scampered into the playroom to see their parents preparing table favors. Streamers, and paper flowers littered the plastic table atop the kiwi rug. Bingo looked to her left and right, then to her parents. "Mum, where's Granddad and Bobba?" she asked.

Chilli creased her paper and set it down. "They're out for the day with Frisky's dad, remember?"

"They're havin' a granddad's day to get to know him," said Bandit, in-between breaths into a red balloon. "We're all gonna be one big family soon."

"What are they doing?" asked Bingo.

"I'm…not sure," Chilli remarked, scratching her head. "Did they tell you where they were going, babe?"

"Nah," Bandit shrugged, tying off the balloon. "But they're probably down the pub or the bowling alley. Typical granddad stuff, ya know?"

Chilli stood up and mimicked her pup's previous visual search. "Where's your sister? It's time for flower girl practice."

"She's coming, she's on the porch," Bingo answered, pointing out toward the hall.

"BINGO, come on!" Muffin shouted from the yard.

The little red heeler startled and dashed off toward the backyard where her cousins and aunt and uncle were waiting by an archway. Chilli grabbed a crown of flowers and followed after. "Don't forget your fancy dress!"

Stepping into the facility, Bob Heeler, Mort Cattle, Gene Spaniel and tag-along Maynard beheld lots of granite and crystal in this front lobby, a swift change from the beer-stained wood and felt dart tables some of them were used to for a day out with prospective new friends.

"It's very…clean," said Maynard.

"I feel like a bara outta water," said Mort.

"Don't worry," said Gene, "by days end you'll wonder how you ever got on without this."

Bob and Mort had hesitantly agreed to Gene's choice of venue for their day off from supervising wedding preparations. To that point, their only interactions with Frisky's father had been taking over chewing out the caterer after Gene had told them "don't sweat it, mate, just do your best." To say they were skeptical after Gene offered them a stress-relieving outing on his dime would be a slight understatement. Maynard on the other hand was all too happy to follow Mort wherever. Thus, they left their take-charge dad mantles at home and walked up to the front desk where an afghan hound smiled warmly at just a bunch of old blokes.

"Welcome to Oasis Hot Spring," she greeted, "Do you have a reservation?"

Gene stepped in front of them to handle the business. "Yeah, love, Gene Spaniel?"

Discover more

Books fan fiction

TV fan fiction

Cookies

The attendant typed for a moment on her keyboard and said, "Perfect, you're all checked in. Just so you know, our facilities are phone-free so please lock them up safe and sound, if you don't mind."

Mort, Bob, Gene nodded their heads at the receptionist. "You too, Maynard," said Bob, glancing at the wolfhound.

Maynard shrugged. "Don't have one."

"Why wouldn't you?" Gene chuckled, adjusting his shark tooth necklace.

"'Cause people kept ringing it!"

Bob gave him a playful sneer. "You sure you ain't holdin' out on us?"

"I can vouch for 'im," said Mort.

The receptionist handed over a set of keys on maroon lanyards and gestured to their left. "Lockers are right through here along with towels. The rest of the facilities are yours. Enjoy!"

"Right, boyos," said Gene, passing out the keys before raising his arms in victory. "Let's get naked!"

Everyone cracked up and followed him toward the locker hall, except for Maynard, who looked back with an incredulous look. "I don't get it," he said, "we don't wear clothes anyway."

"That's the joke, Maynard!" Mort called. "Come on!"

Maynard kicked it into gear and headed inside.

MORT, MAYNARD, GENE & BOB: "This episode of Bandit is called 'A Granddad's Day Out.'"

Gene drew the white silk curtain back and met with rows of lockers on either side of the hall. The old dogs each padded along the cold stone floor to the locker number inscribed on their key to deposit their extranea.

"What exactly do you do at these hot springs, Gene?" Bob asked. "You're the expert."

"Well, they have mud baths, massages, typical spa stuff," said Frisky's dad, "Or you can just dip into the hot spring and watch the day pass."

Discover more

Writing community forum

Comics fan fiction

Privacy policy acceptance

"Would they have the cricket up anywhere?" Mort asked, tossing his green fishing hat into the locker.

Gene laughed. "Nah, mate, I don't think they would." Gene closed his locker and stretched his neck, grunting as it popped and snapped as it rolled atop his body. "Man, I should've booked a massage. Can't take the chop like I used to."

"Come again?" asked Maynard.

"Oh, I mean the rough waves. I surf."

"You surf at your age?" asked Bob. "You still got one of them surfer nicknames too?"

"Yup, it's Wake," said Gene, gently tossing his long hair back. "You and Chris are on the Gold Coast, right? What's your excuse?"

Bob cleared his throat and shut his locker. "I'm down the beach most days. I…was never much of a surfer though. I played footy until I did me hip in."

"That's hardcore, mate," said Gene. "We all need somethin' to keep us young."

Bob smiled at the understanding response. "Yeah, being Bobba for my grandpups took that place."

"This guy right here keeps me young," said Maynard, slinging an arm around Mort. He couldn't hold a blush back as he returned the favor.

"Well, then you can scrub your mate up," said Bob, gesturing to a sign posted on the wall. "Gotta be done before we dip in the pool."

Upon exiting the locker room, the grandads were met with an expansive atrium lounge with wall to ceiling windows displaying a tranquil world outside, deliberately disconnected from both the concrete jungle of Brisbane and the dirt stained chaos of the bush. Signs pointed them to the communal showers which were lined with white tile with accents of sky blue. Stools flanked carts of specialty toiletries and tall mirrors, providing a viewpoint to aid cleansing. Bob and Gene took the two stations in front of them while Mort and Maynard shared one immediately next to them. Thus they washed not only the day's grime so far but the stress and emotions of the wedding planning away.

When finished Mort shook the excess water from his shaggy fur and rose up. "I don't think I've ever felt more clean."

Gene replaced his handheld nozzle, having just rinsed off. "They use the hot spring water here too, ripper stuff."

"What do ya reckon, Bobba?"

Bob brushed his arms out, drops of water cascading onto the tile. "My fur feels kilos lighter. I could be done with the shower, frankly."

"Don't quit early, eh?" Maynard appeared, or it looked like Maynard if he were a sheep.

"Dude," said Gene.

Bob choked back his merriment but Mort didn't have such restraint. "I think you need a shear, mate!" he said between belly laughs.

Maynard leaned forward, hands on his hips. "Been dealing with this coat for 60 somethin' years! You can't pierce through me with your cracks!"

Discover more

Movies fan fiction

Crossover fiction

Cookies policy acceptance

"Not with that parka on ya, we can't," said Bob. The two old Heelers guffawed and stepped carefully across the wet floor toward the waiting hot spring. "Time for the main attraction," said Gene, lining up behind. Maynard trailed them, growling.

The soft new age music continued outside, not missing a beat and perfectly enhancing the vibe of the hot spring. A small waterfall fed the steaming pool, a combination of machine cut and natural scraggly stone. Deep green bushes lined the far side of the pool while trees towered over the whole facility, isolating the spa in its own little bubble.

Bob dipped his toe into the spring and all the tension in his paw seemed to melt away. "Ooh, that hits the spot."

"Don't forget yer towel hats," said Gene, wrapping his small towel into a ball and holding it upon his head. The others copied the hot spring veteran before all four old dogs eased themselves down the stairs into the steaming pool. Their collective aged, scratchy howls of relief could be heard from the parking lot as they lowered themselves to the underwater bench all in a row, the healing water rising to their shoulders.

"That good, eh?" said an approaching waitress.

"You've no idea, love," said Gene.

"Whole parking lot knows we're here, I reckon," said Mort with a chuckle.

"However you enjoy yourselves is fine with us. We do recommend staying hydrated due to the hot spring's high temperature, so can I get you gents started with something?"

"A big fizzy water sounds good," said Maynard, looking to the others for their preferences.

"Fruit juice for me," said Gene.

"A spritzer," said Bob.

"I'll have what he's havin'," said Mort, gesturing to Maynard with his head.

"Will do," said the waitress with a nod, before she returned inside.

"Better make Mort's a small!" Maynard shouted after.

Mort elbowed him. "Can it, you."

Maynard scoffed. "I've been ragged on enough today. I'm sharin' the wealth. 'Sides, just trying to watch after you," he said with a wink.

Mort's smile contradicted his rolling eyes.

"How d'ya mean?" Gene asked.

"Can I, mate?" asked Maynard, adding to his request with the slightest please face.

Mort sighed. "I suppose you'd better."

Maynard jumped right into his tale. "Right, so the other day, we're at me petrol station, and we order curried sausages on delivery. Now I like mine with a bit of kick to 'em, but Mort not so much."

"I had no spice tolerance before India, then I got a taste for the real stuff," Bob remarked.

"I just wanna taste the spice without the spice, you get me?" said Mort. "I dunno who stuffed up the order but my curry was so hot, I had steam pouring out my ears!"

"I had to keep passing the water bottles like sweets to cool his mouth off!" Maynard exclaimed. "Must've downed the upside of four!"

"Did you have to pay for them, mate?" asked Gene.

Mort shook his head. "A benefit of our relationship. And talkin' of…"

At that moment, the waitress returned with the requested drinks for the four old dogs, complete with citrus slices underneath the clear ice cubes. They clinked them together and took simultaneous sips.

"Ah, good ol' vitamin C," said Gene, setting his glass next to him.

"Anywho,"said Maynard, picking back up without a hitch, "he was gonna pay for 'em another way. Not half an hour later, he says to me, 'gonna hit the dunny.'"

Discover more

Fan fiction story

Desserts

Games fan fiction

"I go in there, and half the bloody bowl's sheared off!" Mort chopped with his arm to emphasize the disbelief in his voice.

"Whoa!" exclaimed the two intently listening dogs.

"How d'ya reckon that happened?" Bob asked.

"It blew up a day prior," said Maynard, matter-of-factly. "The aliens are out to get me, I tell ya!"

"And without the common courtesy of an 'out of order' sign," Mort whinged, crossing his arms. "But then, it was near closing time so I figure I can hold on 'til home and not need a bush wee like some drongo."

"Cause you're stubborn," Maynard japed.

"If I have a perfectly good toilet at home, why wouldn't I use it? It's there for a reason!"

"They've always been like this," whispered Bob to Gene.

"Like me and my wife," Gene concurred.

"Hence why you was bouncin' all over my ute seat on the drive back," Maynard pointed out.

Mort sank a little lower into the pool.

"Holy dooley, it was that bad?" asked Gene, slinging a leg atop his knee.

"It came on rather...suddenly," Mort mumbled.

"It ain't a short jaunt to the shop neither," Maynard continued, "And yet you still refused, talking about preserving your dignity and whatnot."

"And I would've been fine if some kangaroo hadn't decided to have her joey in the middle of the road!"

"Get out! What are the chances?" said Bob.

"Bush life," said Maynard. "I look over after 5 minutes or so of waiting in line, and there you are, holding yourself like a toddler, legs pressed together, saying, 'Get around it, I'm gonna bust!'" Maynard imitated Mort's potty dance with a pained look of his own, generating small waves in the spring. "And I say, 'take the bloody bush wee, you old fool!'"

Mort rubbed the bridge of his snout. "A-a-a-and there goes me dignity again."

Bob and Gene laughed. "Don't worry about it, mate," said Bob, "we've all been caught short before."

"Yeah," said Gene, "I remember I went surfin' this one time without using the toilet before hand. Won't make that mistake ever again."

"How'd you solve that?" Mort asked.

Gene leaned back, eyes half-lidded. "I'll just say, it's a good thing my Speedo was already wet."

Silence hung among them for a moment, before Bob double-taked. "Oh, mate!" All burst into wheezing laughter as the implication of Gene's statement became known. Mort's embarrassment was quickly forgotten as the laughter settled down.

Gene wiped a tear from his eye and said, "By the way, didja make it home, mate?"

"Nah, I wouldn't have, and Maynard won't spring for leather seats in his ute," said Mort, getting one back at his mate, "so at least this bloke was the lookout when I took that 'bloody bush wee.' I'll never make that mistake again."

"Well, all's well that ends well, eh?" Gene remarked before taking a sip of his juice and sighing. "Man, I feel like my muscles are unraveling."

"This is the fanciest bath I've ever taken," said Maynard.

Mort sighed. "Just think, our kids are busy folding party favors while we're here living the good life."

"You've changed my life, Gene," said Bob, "Next time I wanna take Chris down the pub or the bowling alley, I'm taking her here."

"She'll love you, mate," said Mort.

The four old dogs let the tranquil nature of the hot spring carry them to utter relaxation as they continued to experience the healing effects of the mineral-rich water and gentle breeze.

"Your eldest is a stand-up bloke," said Gene, breaking the silence. "I'm glad he's marrying my daughter."

"Thanks, mate," said Bob, "Frankly, I'm glad he's marrying at all," said Bob.

"What d'ya mean by that?"

"I just worried about him, you know? He was always a free spirit but he cared so much about his brothers. I knew he'd be a great dad one day but it was never top of his list. He was more concerned about traveling the world or making the most money. He'd say he was 'searching for that missing piece.' At some point, I thought he wasn't gonna find it."
"Sounds familiar," said Gene. "Blokes like me and him just need to follow the wave wherever it goes." Gene took another sip and smiled wistfully.

Bob raised an eyebrow. "You good, mate?"

Gene nodded. "Just…ridin' memories, is all. I envy Rad in a way, getting to try so many dreams in his life. Havin' Frisky squashed that for me."

"When'd you have her, if I may?" asked Mort. "You seem pretty young, compared to us old geezers."

"I was," said Gene, "I was at uni when my wife, girlfriend at the time gave me the news, and people started talking around. And you know, people see a beach bum like me, feathers in me hair and such, on the surf team, they don't immediately think, 'he'd be a great dad, eh?' I had to grow up. It was all about Frisk from then on."

Bob told himself Gene was more than his beach bum exterior, but this confirmed it. "Yeah, havin' kids changes ya like that," said the grey Heeler, snapping his fingers to emphasize it. "It's the only thing I've ever felt unqualified for, and I made a lot of mistakes for sure."

"Tell me about it," said Gene. "I am the first to admit I didn't have a clue!"

"Took me shovin' off to India to really let go of my younger hardnose tendencies, and all three kids said to me, 'we coulda used that as kids!'" Bob laughed with a tinge of guilt and Gene followed. "How'd you handle it?"

Gene leaned back and threw both hands behind his head. "Once the denial wore off, I kissed school g'bye, married my girl, and got the first lifeguarding job I could find to make ends meet. I scrapped for everything I've given Frisk

but I'd do it all again anytime, 'cause I got an amazing daughter out of it. I know wherever she and Rad go from here, they're gonna rip it up."

"Cheers!" said Maynard.

"I'll drink to that," said Mort.

Bob sniffed. "I told myself I wasn't gonna cry at this wedding and you got me doin' it here." The other piped in with laughs. "They'll have to carry me away on a surfboard."

"Hey, I'll volunteer," said Gene, raising his hand.

The dogs laughed and Gene grabbed his glass. "Bring it in, mates. To the soon-to-be wed, and to the great mates I gained in the process. Glad to know ya!"

"You too, mate," said Bob. "You're a good dog."

Gene grinned. "Thanks."

"Three cheers for Gene!" said Mort. The group cheered their drinks with a hearty "hip, hip, hurrah!"

Retrieving his phone from the locker room, Bob was overwhelmed by the number of missed notifications waiting for him. "There might be somethin' to your 'people just kept ringing it' business, Maynard."

"You too?" said Mort. "I just knew they'd start a bush fire without our supervision, eh?"

"Grandads to the rescue!" cheered Maynard.

"Lead the way, mate," said Bob, "you're drivin'."

But when they arrived back at the Heeler's abode, all seemed normal. The "for sale" sign was still standing tall. They were welcomed back inside and led to the backyard to see the progress achieved. The tent had been raised and all the party favors were in boxes, ready to go on the big day. The kids and the grandkids were sure alright.

After dinner, the granddads rested in the TV room with Bandit, Chilli, Radley and Frisky, enjoying a more traditional old dog activity-watching the footy.

"You all are getting along," said Bandit, munchin on a bowl of chips.

"Yeah, we had a great time, just what we needed," said Mort.

"You sure you didn't need us supervising?" asked Bob playfully. "I look at my phone after we left and I got all these notes from you and Chilli! What happened?"

Radley cleared his throat, drawing every eye to him. "Yeah, you ain't gonna get mad when I tell?"

Bob put patted Gene's shoulder "Mate, I promise you, nothing at all could take me out of the zen I've found today with me new pal."

"There's more to us ol' sea dogs than meets the eye, eh?" said Gene.

"Hear, hear," said Bob, clinking his glass with the spaniel, and the two took a hearty drag of their beer.

Rad scratched the back of his neck and gulped. "Well, here goes. I…almost caused Frisky to call off the wedding."

Both sprayed their drinks on the floor, and all four granddads jumped up from the couch. "You WHAT?!" they barked. The take-charge dads had been remantled.

« First « Prev Ch 9 of 13 Next »

Review

Jump:Chapter 1Chapter 2Chapter 3Chapter 4Chapter 5Chapter 6Chapter 7Chapter 8Chapter 9Chapter 10Chapter 11Chapter 12Chapter 13

Share: Email . Facebook . Twitter

Story: Follow Favorite

Author: Follow Favorite

Contrast: Dark . Light

Font: Small . Medium . Large . XL

Bandit by UncaAJ

Cartoons » Bluey Rated: K+, English, Humor & Family, Bluey, Bandit/Dad, Stripe, Pat, Words: 24k+, Favs: 1, Published: Sep 5, 2025 Updated: Sep 7, 2025

1

Chapter 10: MINISODE: Glasses

This Bandit Minisode is called "Glasses."

Inside the sanctuary of their shared home office, Chilli Heeler was pouring over the latest report from the security team she consulted with at Brisbane Airport. At least, it was supposed to be a report. She licked her thumb and pawed through the pages looking for any figure or sentence she could start with but it all looked like fuzzy rows of black markings, as if rows of ants were standing at attention up and down the page. She squinted her eyes to bring the letters into focus, and it helped somewhat, but they never got clearer than some of the faded hieroglyphics hanging up on the wall behind her. It was no use, this had to have her approval by the end of the day and daylight was fading. No choice but to push through.

By the time she got to the end of the report, her eyes felt like they would fall out of her sockets, but all measures declared within were approved and she had filled another page of her nearby notebook with things to talk to them about next time she saw the crew in person.

Returning to the laptop computer, she found the sharp screen had also blurred like the report. She leaned in close and strained to discern the letters of security head Madge's latest email, or rather, tirade.

The amount of people we've had to pull aside for having mouthwash larger than 15 mL is driving me utterly batty! And once again, I find my stapler not where I last left it!
Her rambling and firey complaints, especially about the disorganization in their office supplies easily drew a headache in Chilli, but today, it seemed amplified by the words onscreen forming a meaningless mush. Chilli looked down her snout to see her nose pressed right up against the display. She jerked backwards and rolled off the exercise ball, hitting the floor with a thump.

As her migraine grew as she laid there, so did the rumbling just outside in the hall. By the time it reached its peak, the door was flung wide. She rolled onto her left side to see sky blue heeler paws meeting darker blue heeler legs. Shifting her view to the face of the dog they belonged to felt like shifting boulders in her head.

"What happened in here?" asked Bandit, her husband.

Chilli sighed. "I think work's done for the day."

Bandit by UncaAJ

Cartoons » Bluey Rated: K+, English, Humor & Family, Bluey, Bandit/Dad, Stripe, Pat, Words: 24k+, Favs: 1, Published: Sep 5, 2025 Updated: Sep 7, 2025

1

Chapter 11: MINISODE: Hubby Putdown

This Bandit Minisode is called "Hubby Putdown."

Bandit Heeler blinked awake to the sound of a completely different TV show than he and his wife Chilli were watching.

"-at this rate, you aren't going to make it up to the summit."

Disorientated and groggy and feeling the tonal whiplash of whatever was on TV at that moment, not to mention the bright white assault of the screen, Bandit didn't know if this was real life or a dream. He could barely move as his mind and awareness kicked back into gear. The first thing he thought to do was to grab the remote and turn the volume down. The dramatic music was just too much for…what time was it, anyway?

As the TV volume ticked down to nothing, the still night air outside mixed with the occasional kookaburra cackle took its place, and Bandit felt more at peace. His vision was clear enough now to click away and see what it was the streaming service had taken them to. He remembered seeing ads for this show about 12 regular dogs trying to climb a mountain and not having any interest, despite the streamer's insistent nagging. Leaving a dislike on the show's page for future reference, Bandit turned off the TV, bathing the TV room in soothing darkness.

He chuckled low in his throat. The kids had been put to bed without much incident and he and Chilli decided to congregate in the TV room for some much earned peace and quiet. The last thing he remembered saying was "what do you wanna watch tonight, babe?" and then, almost as soon as they

found a show to watch, he blinked and then, here we are. It seemed a big day of playing games with their daughters from Dawn to dusk has well and truly tuckered out.

Discover more

Books & Literature

Anime & Manga

TV fan fiction

It was then he noticed the weight on his chest.

As he turned his head down, a dark pair of ears came into view, then a snout, then a slowly rising and falling chest. Chilli was still sleeping like a stone, using him as a pillow. As sleepy as he was, an intense feeling of love came in and pushed that all away and he smiled. They sacrificed so much of their time and energy to give their kids the life that they had, but none moreso than his devoted wife. He would not wake her so they could walk to bed together. Instead, Bandit would gift her with continued rest and rejuvenation with one simple action.

As if he were dipping her in a passionate tango, Bandit eased Chilli upon his arms and hoisted her up bridal style as he stood to his feet. He felt his knees creak as he brought both his weight and Chilli's from the couch but this big blue knew his strength would carry them the short walk along the cold wooden floor to their bedroom. On the way, he peeked into the girl's quarters, glow-in-the-dark Star stickers shining bright upon their beds. Bingo was still and sound asleep, while Bluey's ear twitched as she dreamed with a smile. Bandit sighed and blew them a kiss before leaving them to snooze. Passing through the threshold and reaching their king bed, Bandit lowered her onto the white sheets.

It was a golden opportunity left to him after he had forgotten to make the bed earlier in the day. He got one last look at her and his heart melted, like it had so long ago when they first met. She was still so beautiful and he was so lucky to have her and their daughters. He reaffirmed his vow to protect and to love them to his last days, not out of present responsibility but out of the love he had for each one of them, more powerful than him alone.

Bandit yawned and softly padded to the other side of the bed, climbing in and pulling the duvet over the top of Chilli and him in one fell swoop. Settling into the pillow, he took a slow breath in and let it out, ready for precious sleep to take him.

He felt a kiss upon his cheek and he bristled slightly. Turning himself to the other side , he saw Chilli wink at him, snout turned in a smile. "G'night, big fella."

Bandit grinned back, cheeks turning slightly rosy. "Night, babe."

Chapter 12: MINISODE: Decisions

This Bandit Minisode is called "Decisions."

The door to The Mirth and Merriment swung leisurely and Bandit Heeler, Pat Labrador, Josh Border Collie and Diesel Kelpie sauntered out in various stages of wibbly and wobbly. Pat had his arm slung around Diesel's neck, the yellow fur on his face rosier than usual, while Bandit walked mostly straight whilst twirling his keyring on his finger. All dogs piled into Bobo, his reliable orange Jeep and fastened their seatbelts. Bandit climbed in last as the designated driver and shut the door.

"I think it's time for a proper meal, eh?" said Bandit. "Where we goin' to soak up our drink?"

"Nothin' too pricey, Righto?" said Pat in the back. "The ol' wallet's a little lighter than before."

"Barkeep's thankful for that," said Diesel, poking Pat on the top of his head. "Next time, don't make darts wagers you won't regret."

Pat waved Diesel's hand away. "Says you with your lucky triple 20!"

"Guys, I'm hungry here!" said Bandit. "Back to task."

"How about a curry?" asked Josh.

"I had curry last night, thanks to you," said Diesel.

"Oh yeah, that's right," said Josh.

"I could go for chicken bucket," said Bandit.

"Isn't the closest chicken bucket across town?" asked Josh.

"I'll eat a boot off the sidewalk at this point," Bandit groaned, clutching his stomach.

Pat opened the back door. "Uh, gimme a mo', tank needs drainin'."

"I wouldn't use the bar's dunny if I were you," said Diesel.

Pat paused, one foot hanging out over the road. "Really?"

"You remember when Stripe spilled the soup all over the kitchen?"

The dogs paused to recall the memory, then recoiled simultaneously. "Ew!"

"Yeah, not pretty," Diesel confirmed.

Pat shut the door, and all sat in silence for a moment, trying to erase the mental picture Diesel had painted. Pat then smiled sheepishly and reached down to hold himself. "So I'm gonna need a place for us to eat or…a bush."

Bandit threw his paws up and cried out in exasperation. "This happened last time!" he complained. "How is it that whenever we go out, we can never decide what to eat?"

Discover more

Games fan fiction

Fan fiction story

Comics

Josh, Pat, and Diesel looked at Bandit, then at each other, then said, "Dunno, mate."

Bandit rolled his eyes. "Okay, look, I'll solve it the same way I solved it last time. There's a chippery down the street and I know they're open late because we've been before. Is everyone okay with that?"

Everyone nodded. "Yup."

"Right," Bandit sighed. "Let's go, then." With that, he turned the key and Bobo roared to life.

"Hooray!" they all cheered.